



The Globe's thy Study; for thy boundless mind  
In a less limit cannot be confin'd.  
Gazing; I here admire: thy very looks  
Show thou art read as well in men, as bookes.  
He that shall Scan thy face, may judge by it,  
Thou hast an Headpeece that is throng'd with wit.

I. F.





The Globe's thy Study; for thy boundless mind  
In a less limit cannot be confin'd.  
Gazing; I here admire: thy very looks  
Show thou art read as well in men, as bookes.  
He that shall Scan thy face, may judge by it,  
Thou hast an Headpeece that is throng'd with wit.

I. F.



The English Padder or Hiway Robber. Portrayd.

Vol. 1. Part 1. No. 1. 1811.

THE  
English Rogue:

Described in the Life  
Of Meriton Latroon,

A WITTY  
EXTRAVAGANT:

Comprehending the  
Most Eminent Cheats

OF  
BOTH SEXES.

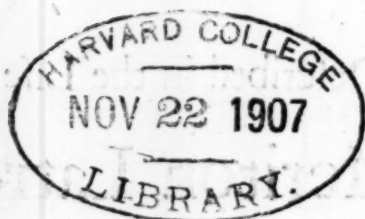
*Richard Read and Francis Kirkman*

*12x. I.*  
Read, but don't Practise; for the Author finds  
They which live Honest, have most quiet minds.

L O N D O N,  
Printed for Francis Kirkman, and are to be Sold by  
William Rands in Duck-lane, 1680.

THE

75493.17.2\*



Subscription fund

Comprising the

Most Eminent Cheats

BOTH SEXES.

and - but - for the Author's  
they which are H. and -

LONDON

Printed for Francis & Taylor, and are to be sold  
William Rans in Duck-lane, 1880.

99  
10

*The Preface to the Reader.*

**W**Hen this peice was first published, it was ushered into the World with the usual Ceremony of a Preface, (and that a large one) whereby the Authour endeavoured to possess the Reader with a belief, that what was written, was the life of a *Witty Extravagant*, the Authors Friend and Acquaintance. This was the intent of the Writer, but the Readers could not be drawn to this belief, but in general concurred in this Opinion, that it was the Life of the Authour, and notwithstanding all that hath been said to the contrary, many still continue in this opinion. Indeed the whole story is so genuine and naturally described, without any forcing or Romancing, that all contained in it, seems to be naturally true, and so I'll assure you it is, but not acted by any one single person, much less by the Author, who is well known to be of an inclination much different from the soul debaucheries of the Relations, and if the Readers had read the *Spanish Rogue, Gusman*; the *French Rogue Francion*; and several other Forraign Wits, and have upon Examination found, that the Authors were persons of great Eminency and Honour, and that no part of their own Writings were there one Lives, They had happily changed their opinion of the Author of this; but they holding this opinion, caused him to desist from prosecuting his story in a Second Part; and he having laid down the

## *The Preface to the Reader.*

the Cudgels, I took them up, and my design in so doing, was out of three considerations, the first and cheifest was to gain ready money; the second, I had an Itch to gain some Reputation by being in Print, and thereby revenge my self on some who had abused me, whose actions I recited; and the third was, to advantage the Reader, and make him a gainer, by acquainting him with my experiences. These were the reasons for my engaging in the Second Part, and the very same reason induced me to joyn with the Author in composing and Writing a third and fourth Part, in which we have club'd so equally, and intermixt our stories so joyn'tly, that it is some difficulty for any at first sight to distinguish what we particularly Wrote; and now having concluded the Preface, which should never have been begun, but that I had a blank page, and was unwilling to be so ill a husband to you, but that you should have all possible content for your money, and withal, to tell you, that I would not have you as yet to expect any more part of the book, for although a fifth and last part is design'd, yet I'll assure you, there is never a stich a miss, nor one line Written of it; and if you desire that, you must give me encouragement by your speedy purchasing of what is already Written, and thereby you will ingage,

*Your Friend*

*Francis Kirkman*



The  
 ENGLISH ROGUE  
 Describ'd in the Life of a Witty  
 EXTRAVAGANT.

Part. I,

CHAP. I.

*What his Parents were. The place of his own Nativity.  
 His miraculous escape from the hands of Irish Re-  
 bels. His Brother being at that very time murdered  
 by the hands of those bloody Butchers.*



After a long and strict Inquisition after  
 my Fathers Pedegre, I could not  
 finde any of his Ancestors bearing a  
 Coat: surely length of time had  
 worn it out. But if the Gentle craft  
 will any wayes ennoble his Family,  
 I believe I could deduce several  
 of his Name, professors of that lasting Art, even  
 from Crispin. My Fathers Father had by his continu-  
 al labour in husbandry, arrived to the height of a  
 Farmer, then the Head of his Kindred: standing upon  
 one of his own Mole-Hills, Ambition so swelled him,  
 that he swore by his Plow-share, that his eldest Son  
 (my Father) should be a Scholliard, and should learn  
 so long, till he could read any printed or written hand  
 say, and if occasion should serve, write a Bill or Bond.

It was never known that any of the Family could distinguish one Letter from another, neither could they speak above the reach of their Horses understanding. Talk to them in any other Dialect but that of a *Bag pudding of a Peck* or a *piece of Beef* (in which their teeth might step whet shod) and a man were as good to have discoursed with them in *Arabick*. But let me not abuse them; for some understood something else that is to say, the Art of Whistling, Driving their Team and to shoe themselves as well as their Horses; how to lean methodically upon a Staff, and through the holes of their Hat, tell what it is a Clock by the Sun.

The symmetrical proportion, sweetness of feature, and acuteness of my Fathers wit, were such (though extracted out of this lump of *red and white marble*) that he was belov'd of all. As the loveliness of his person gain'd alwayes an Interest in Female hearts; so the quickness of apprehension and invention, & the acquired quaintness of his expressions; procured him the friendship of such as conversed with him. A Gentleman at length taking notice of more then ordinary natural Parts in him, at his proper charge sent him to School contrary to the desire of his Father, who was able enough to maintain him at School; and to say the truth this Gentleman offered not my Father his patronage upon any charitable account, but that he might hereafter glory in the being the chief instrument of bringing up such a fair promising Wit, which he questioned not with good cultivation would bring forth such Lovely fruit as would answer cost, and fully satisfie his expectation. Being admitted into the Grammar-School, by the strength of his memory, to his Masters great amazement, in a very short time he had *Lillies Rules* by heart, out-stripping many that for years had been entred before him: his

Master

Master perceiving what a stupendious proficiency he had made, was very glad that this fair opportunity offered it self, that he might be idle, and in order thereunto would frequently appoint my Father to be his Usher or Deputy, when he intended to turn Bacchanalian, to drink, Hunt, or Whore, to which vices he was over-much addicted, My Father having now conquered in a manner the difficulties of that Schools Learning, began now to lay aside his Book, and follow the Steps of his vicious learned Master, the examples of a Superior proving oftentimes guides to inferior actions,

*Regis ad exemplum.*

Besides this springing Age ( wherein the blood is hot and fervent ) spur'd him on, and the natural disposition of his mind, gave him wings to flye whither his unbounded, licentious, self pleasing will would direct. His Youth introducing him into all sorts of vanity and his Constitution of body, was the Mother of all his unlawful pleasures. His Temperament gave Sense a preheminance above Reason, Thus you see ( experience can more fully demonstrate ) how the heat of the Youth gives fuel to the Fire of Voluptuous enjoyments; but without a supply of what may purchase these delights, invention must be Tenter-hook'd; which ever proves dangerous, most commonly fatal, My Grand-father too indulgent to his Son, supply'd him continually with money, which he did the more freely, since he was exempted from such charges which necessity required for my Fathers maintenance, he having now more than a bare competency, he not only consents to the commission of evil, but tempts others to perpetrate the like. And now following his own natural proneness to irregular liberty, diurnally suggests matter of innovation, not onely to his own, but others reasons *Letum non citius relinquit quam in Deum diligit*

*relinquens quam in Deum delinquens, non citius surgens quam insurgens.* No sooner relinquishing his bed, but delinquishing his Creator, no sooner rising, than rising against his God. In short, I know not whether he prevailed more on others, or others on him, for he was facile, the best Nature is quickly depraved, as the purest flesh corrupts soonest, and most noisom when corrupted. Yet notwithstanding these blooming debaucheries, he neglected not his Study so much, but that he capacitated himself for the University, and by approbation was sent thither by his Patron. He applied himself close to his book for a while, till he had adopted himself a companion for the most absolute crick could be selected out of any of the Colledges: in the assured confidence of his own parts, he ventured among them, and left such remarks of his cunning wit in all companies he came into, that the Gallants and most notable wits of *Oxford* covered so much his company, that he had not time to apply himself to his Study, but giving way to their solicitations, being prompted thereunto by his own powerful inclination, plunged himself over head and ears in all manner of sensuality. For his lewd carriage, inimitably wicked practices, and detestable behavior, he was at last expelled the Colledge.

Now was he forc'd to return to his Father, who with much joy received him, but would not tell him the true cause of his coming down: but to palliate his villanies, informed his Father that he had learned as much as he could be instructed in, and now and then would sprinkle his discourse with a *Greek* or *Latin* Sentence, when talking with the poor ignorant old Man, who took wonderful delight in the measure thereof. When my Father spake at any time they were all as silent as mid night, and then would

My Grandfather with much admiration beckon to the  
 standers by, to give their greatest attention, to what  
 the *Speaker* as little understood as his *Auditors*, not ca-  
 ring what non-sence he utter'd, if wrapt up in unintelligi-  
 ble hard words, purposely to abuse those brutish  
 plough-jobbers, in ostentation he was carried to the  
 parson of the Parish to discourse with him; who by  
 good fortune understood no other Tongue but what his  
 Mother taught him, my Father perceiving that, made  
 the *Shouldramutton* and *Ratathumpton* serve for very good  
*Greek*; which the Parson confirm'd, telling my Grand-  
 father further, that his Son was an excellent Schollar,  
 and protesting that he was so deeply learned, that he spake  
 things he understood not; this I have heard him say,  
 it made him as good sport as ever he receiv'd in the most  
 ingenious Society.

He had not been long in the Country, before a Gen-  
 tle-woman taking notice of his external and internal  
 qualifications, fell deeply in love with him; and pre-  
 ferring her own pleasure before the displeasure of her  
 wealthy Relations, she *incontinently* was married to  
 him. I shall wave how it was brought about in every  
 particular, but only instance what is therein remark-  
 able. Doubtless the gestures he used in his preaching  
 (when she was present) might something avail in the  
 conquest of her affections, beginning with a *dearly be-*  
*loved* passionately extended, looking full in her face all  
 the while, and being in the time of the Kingdoms alte-  
 ration and confusion, a temporizing Minister, he had  
 learned all those tricks by which those of his Sect and  
 sect used to bewitch a female ear; but that wch chiefly  
 affected his desires, was the assurance of an old matron;  
 that lived near my mother, who for profit scrupled not  
 to officiate a *Bawd*; this good old Gentlewoman con-  
 stituted waies to bring them together, unsuspected by  
 any



any, by which means they obtain'd the opportunity to perform *Hymens* Rites, Sans Ceremonies of the Church. My mother finding impregnation, acquainted my Father therewith, who (glad to hear how fast he had tyed her to him) urged her to the speedy consummation of a Legal Marriage; which she more longed for than he did himself, but knew not how to bring it to pass, by reason of those many Obstacles which they saw obvious, and thwarting their intentions. As first, the vast disproportion between their Estates; next, the Antipathy her Parents bore to his Function, joyning these to many other Obstructions, which Fancy and Knowledg presented to them, they concluded to steal a Wedding, and accordingly did put it in execution. Much troubled her Parents were at first, to hear how their Daughter had ship-wrackt her Fortune (as they judg'd it) in the unfortunate losing her Maiden-head, but time, with the intercession of Friends, procured a Reconciliation between them, and all parties well pleased. The old People took great delight in their fortune, hopeful thoughts and expectations of their Son-in-law, but he more in the reception of of a large Sum of money they paid him, and my Mother most of all (as she thought) in the continual conversation and enjoyment of my Father, which she equally ranked with what might be esteem'd the best of things.

His eminent parts natural, (and what he attain'd unto by his Country Studies, being sham'd to have lost so much time) introduc'd him as a Chaplain to a Noble man, with whom he travelled into *Ireland*. He took Shipping at *Mylneard*, and from thence sayled to *Knock-forgus*, where he lived both creditably and comfortably. Experience had then so reformed his Life to so strict a religious course, that his Observers gain'd more by

by his Example, than his Hearers by Precepts. Thus by his piety in the purity of its practice, he soon regain'd his lost credit.

By this time my Mother grew near her time, having conceiv'd me in *England*, but not *conceiving* she should thus drop me in an *Irish bog*. There is no fear but *England* and *Ireland* will after my decease, contend about my Nativity, as several Countreies did about *Homer*; either striving to have the honour of first giving him breath. Neither shall I much thank my Native Countrey, for bestowing on me such principles as I and most of my County men drew from that very Air; the place I think made me appear a Bastard in disposition to my Father. It is strange the Clymate should have more prevalency over the Nature of the Native, than the disposition of the Parent. For though Father and Mother, could neither flatter, deceive, revenge, equivocate, &c. yet the Son (as the consequence hath since made it appear) can (according to the common custom of his Countrey-men) dissemble and smooth up his Adversary with expressions extracted from *Celestial Manna*, taking his advantage thereby to ruine him: For to speak the truth, I could never yet love any but for by-respect, neither could I ever be perswaded into a pacification with that man who had any way injured me, never reeking satisfied till I had accomplished a plenary revenge, which I commonly effected under the pretence of great love and kindness. Cheer all I deale withal, though the matter were ever so inconsiderable. Lye so naturally, that a Miracle may be as soon wrought, as a Truth proceed from my mouth. And then for Equivocation, or Mental Reservations, they were ever in me innate Properties. It was alwayes my resolution, rather to dye by the hand of a common Executioner, than want my revenge,



though ever so slightly grounden: But I shall desist here to characterize my self further, reserving that for another place.

Four years after my Birth, the Rebellion began so unexpectedly, that we were forced to flee in the night, the light of our flaming Houses, Ricks of Hay, and Stacks of Corn, guided us out of the Town, and our Fears soon conveyed us to the Mountains: The Rebels wandering to and fro, intending either to meet with their friends, (who flock from all parts to get into a Body) or else any English, which they design'd as sacrifices to their implacable malice, or inbred antipathy to that Nation, met with my Mother, attended by two Sculogues, her menial Servants, the one carrying me, the other my Brother. The Fates had decreed my brothers untimely death, and therefore unavoidable, the faithful infidel being butchered with him. The surviving servant who carried me, declared that he was a Roman Catholick, and imploring their mercy with his howling *Carm a Crets*, for *St. Patrick a gra*, procured my Mothers, his own, and my safety.

Thus was I preserv'd, but I hope not reserv'd as a subject for Divine Vengeance to work on. Had I then dyed, no other guilt could have rendred me culpable from Gods Tribunal, but what was derivative before *Adam*. But since the concatenation of sins various links hath encompassed the whole series of my life, Now to the intent I may deter others from perpetrating the like, and receive to my self Absolution (according as it is promised) upon unfeigned Repentance and ingenious Confession of my nefarious Facts, I shall give the Readers a Summary Relation of my life, from my Non-age to the Meridian of my dayes, hoping that my Extravagancies and youthful Exilliences have in that state of life, their declination and period.

CHAP.

## CHAP. I I.

*A short account of the general Insurrections of the Irish,  
Anno 1641.*

**B**UT though the mercy of these inhumane Villains extended to the saving of our Lives, yet they had so little consideration and commiseration, as to expose our bodies (by stripping us) stark naked to the extremity of a cold Winter night, not so much as sparing my tender Age. Thus without Shooes or stockings, or the least Rag to cover our nakedness, with the help of our Guide. we travelled all night through Woods as obscure as that black darkness that then environed our Horrizon. By break of day we were at *Belfast*; about entering the skirts of the Town, this honest and grateful servant, (which is much in an Irish man) being then assured of our safety, took his leave of us and returned to the Rebels.

Here were we received with much pity of all, and entertained, & cloth'd, & fed, by some charitable minded Persons; to gratifie their souls for what they had done for my mothers body, and those that belong'd to her, my Father frequently preacht, which gave general satisfaction, and continued thus in instructing his hearers, till the *Sark* or *Surplice*, was adjudged by a Scottish Faction, to be the absolute Smock of the Whore of *Babylon*. Then was he constrained to flie again to *Linsagarry*, taking his charge with him.

Before I proceed, give me leave to digress a little in

in giving you a brief account of the Irish Rebellion, not two years before it broke out, all those Ancient Animosities, Grudges, and Hatred, which the Irish had ever been observed to bear unto the English, seemed to be deposited and buried in a firm Conglutination of their Affections, and National Obligations, which passed between them. For these two had lived together forty Years in peace, with such great security and comfort, that it had in a manner consolidated them into one body, knit and compacted together with all those Ligatures of Friendship, Alliance, and Consanguinity, as might make up a constant and everlasting Union betwixt them there. Their Inter-marriages were near upon as frequent as their Gossipings and Fosterings, (relations of much dearness among the Irish) together with all Tenancies, Neighborhoods and Services interchangeably passed among them. Nay, they had made as it were a mutual Transmigration into each others manners, many English being strongly degenerated into Irish Affections and Customs, and many of the better sort of Irish studying as well the Language of the English, as delighting to be Apparel'd like them. Nay, so great an advantage did they finde by the English Commerce and Cohabitation, in the Profits and high improvements of their Lands, as Sir *Phelim O Neal*. that rebellious Ringleader, with divers others eminent in that bloody Insurrection, had not long before torn'd off their Lands, these Irish Tenants, admitting English in their Rooms; who were able to give them far greater Rents, and more certainly pay the same. So as all those circumstances duly weighed and considered with the great increase of Trade, and many other evident Symptoms of a flourishing Common-wealth; it was belevied even by the wisest and most experienced in the affairs of Ireland, that the Peace and Tranquillity,

quillity of that Kingdom was fully settled, and most likely in all humane probabillity to continue, especially under the Government of such a King as *Charles* the first, whom after Ages may admire, but never match. Such was the serenity and security of this Kingdom, as that there appeared not any where any Martial preparations, nor any reliques of any kinde of disorders, no not so much as the least noise of War whisperingly carried to any ear in all this Land.

Now whilst in this great calm, the *Brittish* continued in the deepest security, whilst all men sat pleasantly enjoying the fruits of their own labors, sitting under their own Vines, without the least thoughts of apprehension of Tumults, Tronbles, or Massacres, there break out on *October* the twenty third, in the Year of our Lord, sixteen hundred forty one, a most desperate, direful, and formidable Rebellion, an Universal Defection and Revolt, wherein not only the meer Native Irish, but almost all those English that profest the Name of *Roman Catholicks*, were totally involved.

Now since it is resolved by me to give you a particular account of the most remarkable Transactions and Passages of my life, it will be also necessary to acquaint you with the beginning and first motions; Neither shall I omit to trace the progress of this Rebellion, since therein, I shall relate summarily my sufferings, and what others underwent, the horrid cruelties of the Irish, and their abominable murders, as well without number, as without mercy, upon the English Inhabitants of both Sexes, and all Ages.

It was carried with such secrecy, that none understood the Conspiracy, till the very evening that immediately preceeded the night of its general execution. I must confess there was some such thing more than

than suspected by one *Sir William Cole*, who presently sent away Letters to the Lord cheif Justices, but miscarried by the way. *Owen O Conally* (though meer Irish, was notwithstanding a Protestant) was the first discoverer of this general Insurrection, giving in the Names of some of the cheif Conspirators. Hereupon the Lords convened and sat in Council, whose care and prudence at that time was such, that some of the Ring-leaders were instantly seized, and upon examination, confest that on that very day of their surprizal, all the Ports and Places of strength in *Ireland* would be taken; that there was a considerable number of Gentlemen and others, twenty out of each County, were come up expressly to surprize the Castle of *Dublin*. Adding further, that what was to be done in the Country (were *Mercury* the swift Messenger) could neither by the wit of man, or by Letter be prevented. Hereupon a strict search was made for all strangers lately come to Town, and all Horses were seized on, whose owners could not give a good account of them. And notwithstanding there was a Proclamation disperst through all *Ireland*, giving notice of a horrid Plot designed by Irish Papists, against English Protestants; intending thereby a discouragement to such of the Conspirators, as yet had not openly declared themselves. Yet did they assemble in great number, principally in the North, in the Province of *Ulster*, taking many Towns, as the *Newry*, *Drummoor*, &c. burning, spoiling, and committing horrible murders every where. These things wrought such a general consternation and astonishment in the minds of the English; that they thought themselves no where secure, flying from one danger into another.

In a very short time, the meer Irish Northern Papists by closely pursuing on their first Plot, had got

ten



ten into their possession most of the Towns, Forts, Castles, and Gentlemens houses, within the Counties of Tyron, Donegal, Fermonah, Arimah, Canan, &c. The cheif that appeared in the Execution of this Plot, within the Province of Ulster, were Sir Phelim O Neal, Turlough his Brother, Ronre Mack Guire, Philip O Rely, Sir Conne Mac Gennis, Mac Brian, and Mac Mahan, these combining with their Accomplices dividing their Forces, and according to a general assignation, surprized the Forts of Dongannon and Montjoy, Carlemont, with other places of considerable strength. Now began a deep Tragedy: The English having few other than Irish Landlords, Tenants, Servants, Neighbors, or familiar friends, as soon as this fire break out, and the whole Country in a general Conflagration, made their recourse presently to some of these, lying upon them for protection and preservation, and with great confidence trusted their lives and all their concerns in their powers. But many of these in short time after, either betrayed them to others, or destroyed them with their own hands. The Popish Priests had so charged, and laid such bloody impressions on them, as it was held according to their Doctrine they had received, a deadly sin to give an English Protestant any relief.

All bonds of faith and friendship now fractur'd, Irish Landlords now prey'd on their English Tenants; Irish Tenants and Servants, made a sacrifice of their English Landlords and Masters, one Neighbour murdering another, nay, 'twas looked on as an act meritorious in him that could either subvert or supplant an English man; the very children imitating the cruelty of their parents, of wch I shall carry a mark with me to my grave, given me with a skene by one of my Irish playfellows. It was now high time to fly, although we knew not whither; every

every place we arriv'd at we thought least secure, wherefore our motion was continual; and that which heightened our misery, was our frequent stripping thrice a day, and in such a dismal stormy tempestuous season as the memory of man had never observ'd to continue so long together. The terror of the Irish and Scotch incomparably prevailed beyond the rage of the Seas, so that we were resolv'd to use all possible means to get on Ship-board. At *Belfast* we accomplish'd our desires, committing our selves to the more merciful Waves. This Relation being so short, cannot but be very imperfect, yet if I dare credit my mother, it is not stain'd with falshood. Many horrid things (I confess) I purposely omitted, as desiring to wave any thing of aggravation, or which might occasion the least Animosity between two, though of several Languages, yet I hope both united in the demonstration of their constant Loyalty to their Sovereign *Charles the Second*.

### CHAP. III.

*After his arrival in Devonshire, he briefly recounts what waggeries he committed being but a Child.*

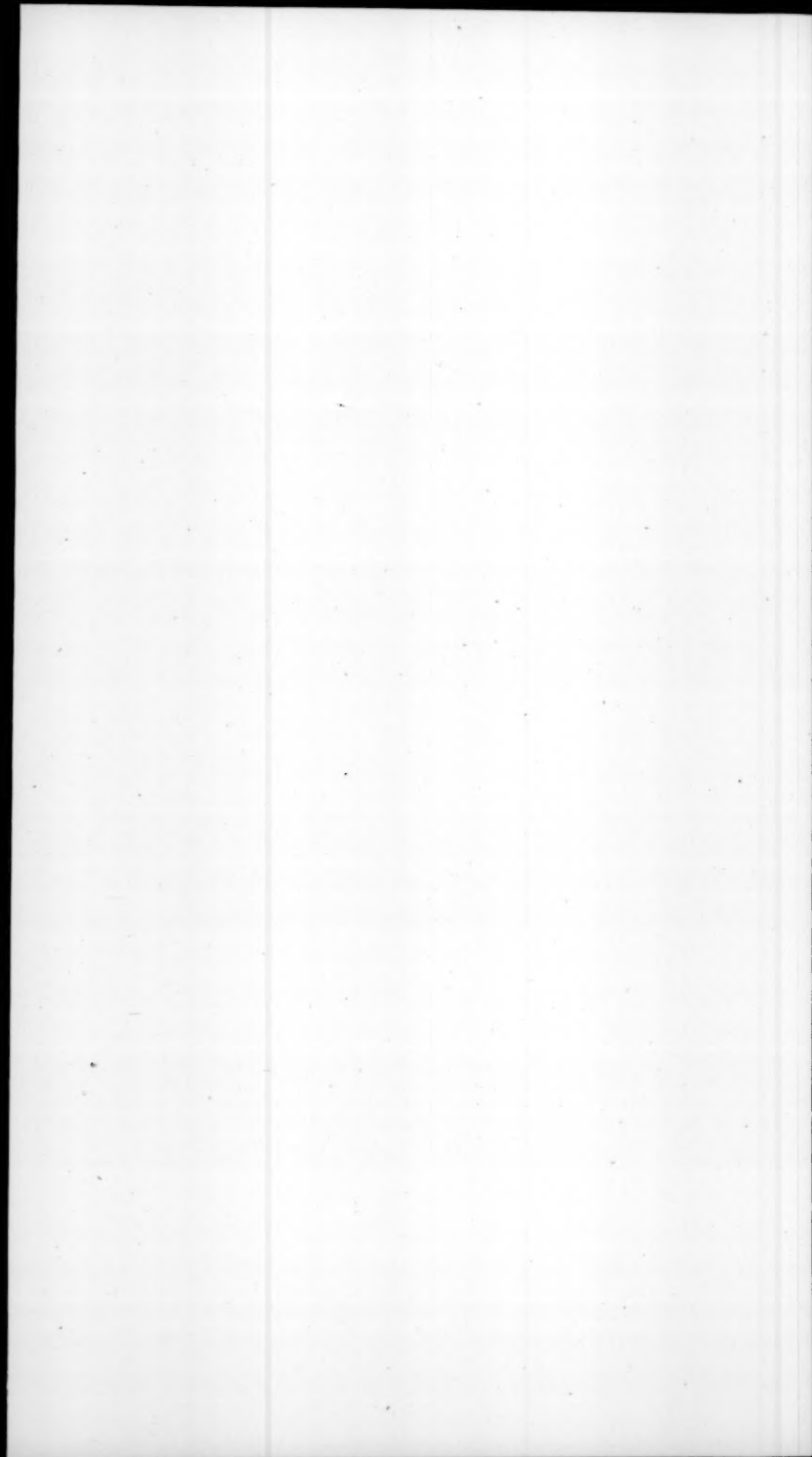
**B**EING about five years of age, report rendred me a very beautiful child, neither did it (as most commonly) prove a lyar. Being enrich'd with all the good properties of a good face, had not pride in that my tender age, depriv'd me of those graces and choice ornaments which compleat both form and feature. Thus it hapn'd, My Father kept com-



monly many Turkeys; one amongst the rest could not endure the sight of a Red Coat, which I usually wore, But that which most of all exasperated my budding passion, was, his assaulting my bread and butter, and in stead thereof, sometimes my hand; which caused my bloomy Reveng to use this Stratagem: I enticed him with a piece of Custard (which I temptingly shewed him, not without some suspicion of danger which fear suggested, might attend my treachery, and so led him to the Orchard-gate, which was made to shut with a pulley; he reaching in his head after me, I immediately clapt fast the Gate, and so surpris'd my mortal Foe. Then did I use that little strength I had, to beat his brains out with my Cat-stick; which being done, de-volum'd his rai, sticking those feathers in my Bonnet, as the insulting Trophies of my first and latest conquest. Such then was my Pride, as I nothing but gazed up at them; which so tired the weakness of mine eyes, and strain'd the Optick Nerve, that they ran a tilt at one another, as if they contended to share with me in my glory. This accident was no small trouble to my Mother, that so doated on me, that I have often heard her say, *She forgot to eat (when I sat at Table) for admiring the sweetness of my Complexion.* After she had much grieved her self to little purpose, she consulted with patience, and applyed her self to skilful Occulists, to repair the loss this face blemishing had done so sweet countenance, though for the present it eclipsed my Mothers glory and pride, yet time and art reduced my eyes to their proper station; so that within six years their oblique aspects were hardly discernable. When I was about ten Years old, I have heard some say, that the cast off my eyes was so far from being a detriment that it became my ornament. Experience confirm'd me in this belief; for they prov'd as powerful, as the persuasive

persuasive arguments of my deluding tongue; both which, conjoyn'd, were sufficient (I speak it not va-  
 gloriously) to prevail over the *Goddess of Chastity*  
 especially when they were backt on with ardent de-  
 sires, and an undaunted resolution. But to my purpose  
 being driven out of *Ireland*, there being at that time no  
 place of safety in that Kingdome, my Mother taking  
 me with her, being compelled to leave my Father be-  
 hind barbarously murdered by the Rebels for being  
 protestant preacher) she adventured to Sea, not caring  
 whether she went, foulness of weather drove us  
 upon the Coast of *France*, where we were forced to  
 land, to repair what damage the Ship had sustained by  
 stress of weather, from hence we set sail, and landed  
 in the West of *England*, at a place called *Barnstaple*  
 in the County of *Devon*. Here we were joyfully re-  
 ceived, and well entertained by some of my Mother's  
 kindred at first; but lying upon them, they at length  
 grew weary; so that we were forced to go from thence  
 to *Plymouth*. We being here altogether unacquainted  
 both with the people and their profession, my Mother  
 having an active brain, casts about with her self how  
 she should provide for her charge, but found no way  
 more expedient, than the pretention of Religion. Zeal  
 now and Piety were the only thing she seem'd to pro-  
 secute, taking the literal sense of the Text; *Wisdom  
 doubt Godliness is great gain*: but she err'd much in her  
 profession and seasonable practice thereof; Hers being  
 according to the mind of the true Church, the Church  
 of *England*, whereas the *Plymouthians* were at that time  
 Heterodox thereunto, and led away as the rest of the  
 Brethren called Roundheads, by the spirit of delusion  
 finding how much she was mistaken, she chang'd quick-  
 ly her nose and coat; a rigid Presbyterian at first,  
 that proving not so profitable, instantly transform'd

.  
00  
va  
fir  
d  
00  
e  
kit  
b  
g  
an  
c  
t  
d  
A  
n  
no  
a  
en  
to  
th  
o  
w  
C  
or  
t  
i  
n  
in  
a  
C



er self into a strict Independent. This took well which made her stick close to the Brethren, which raised their spirits to make frequent contribution in private to supply her wants. Here we had borrowed so much of the Sister-hood, who vilely suspected my Mother to be too dearly beloved by the Brother-hood, that it was high time to rub off to another place, lest staying longer, the whole Mask of Dissimulation should fall off; and she being detected, be shamefully excluded from their Congregation, and so be delivered up to be buffeted by Satan. Now farewell *Plymouth*, no matter whither we went, for where ever we came; we found still some or other that gave us entertainment for those good parts they found in my Mother, she being very well read both in Divinity and History, and having an eloquent tongue, she commonly applyed her self to the Minister of the Town; who wondring to see so much learning and perfection in a woman, either took us into his own house for a while, or gathered some contributions to supply our present necessities, with which we travelled to the next Town; and in this manner we rouled or wandred up and down, being little better than mendicant itinerants: staying so little time in a place, and my Mother being more careful to get a subsistence, than to season my tender years with the knowledge of Letters. I was ten years old before I could read, travelling through many Towns unfit for our purpose, we at last took our seat for a while at *Bridport* in *Dorset-shire*, here being ashamed to go to School in this ignorance, I applyed my self to my mother, who taught me to apprehend the alphabet in less hours than there are letters; so that in a short time I could read distinctly, and was immediately introduced into the Grammar School; where I had not been long, before I became a book worm, securing as many as

lay in my way, if convenient privacie serv'd. And to the intent that my Thefts might pass undiscovered, before I would vend what Books I had stolen, I usually metamorphos'd them, if new, I would gash their skin, and if the leaves were red, I would make them look pale for the wounds they received; if much used, tear out all the remarks, and paint their old faces, and having so done, make sale of them. This course I followed a long time undiscovered, which cost many a boy a whipping at home by their parents, as well as Master. I had various uses for my money I made thereof (you must think) but principally to bribe some of the upper forme to make my Exercises, which were so well liked of by my Master, that I still came off with applause; and in short time so advanc'd, that I was next to the highest Form, when I understood not the lowest Author we read, I was forced to imploy my wits in the management of my hands, to keep touch with my pensioners, lest they failing me for want of encouragement, my Master should discover my Danceship was abused. Frequent were my truantings, which were alwayes attended with some notorious fact, besides small faults, as robbing of Orchards, pulling the first and seconds of forty or fifty Geese at a time, milking the Cows or Goats into my Hat, and so drink the milk: and then for Poultry, there was seldome a day escaped wherein I had not more or less, usually I took them thus, at night I haunted the Hen roosts, taking them off so quietly from what they stood on, that their keekling noise seldome alarm'd the rest, if I could not conveniently carry them off, I made their Eggs compound for their heads. If I met with any Geese at any time, then out came my short stick with a string fastned to a buller, and tyed to the end thereof, with this would I fetch in my Game by the neck;

neck; the weight of the bullet twirling the string so many times about the neck, that they could not disengage themselves from inevitable destruction. I used to fish for Ducks, baiting my Hook with a gut or some such trash, and laying it on a peice of cork, that swimming it might be the sooner perceived, I could catch in a short time as many as I pleased: nay, I have not only thus deceived the tame fowl; but the same way with a longer time, I have caught Gulls and other Sea-birds. What I had gotten by these cunning (and so much to be approved tricks) I carried to a house that encouraged me in my Roguery, participating of the cheer, and so feasting me for my pains if I had stolen any thing, I had my recourse to them, who would give two pence for what was worth a shilling, and render me good content. I knew my punishment for my rambolling, and valued it not; therefore little hope of reformation from thence. Nay, for very small faults I wisht to be whipt, knowing the Rod would then be laid on gently; which carried with it a tickling pleasure. As for my Thefts and Rogueries abroad, I was careful they should not be discovered, if any boy had injur'd me whose strength exceeded mine, so that I durst not cope with him, I would exercise my revenge upon him privately, concealing the resentment of the injury he did me: for to grin and not bite, doth but perswade an Adversary to knock out those teeth that may prove some time or other injurious. One common trick I had was to stick a pin on the board whereon he was to sit: in this manner did I serve several; in which fact I was at last taken? The punishment my Master inflicted on me, was, to sit by his desk alone, and compose a copy of Verses; there was a likely hood I should perform my task, when I knew not how many feet an Hexameter required, and yet I then read *Virgil*. However



some thing I must attempt, and thinking *Saphicks*, and *Jambicks* too difficult, I ventured upon *Heroicks* supposing them the easier composition. But Lord what an excess of laughter did my Master fall into, when he perused my hobbling strains; surely said he, these Verses are running a race altogether, the first did not start fairly, or else is a very nimble Gentleman, for he hath out-run all his fellows four feet? the second comes two foot short of him, yet too forward for a true pace: here is another lame in a foot, and halts most scurvily: here is another whose quantity is short and hath gotten upon stilts to seem long, and one (in contradiction to him) which is long, because he will be short hath cut his own legs off: with these and the like speeches did he please himself in his own wit, (which I understood but little) and after he had tyred himself and me too with prodigal talk: he then spake to me in a harder dialect, making me understand how ignorant I was, and how much precious time (irrecoverably) I had lost which so much seiz'd on my spirits, that I was much griev'd and troubled, so that he made vermillion tears run down my cheeks, &c. After he had bestowed so much correction as he thought might work in me penitence for my egregious truanting he degraded me, and made me begin a new. The shame whereof and reproach I daily received from my school-fellows, I could not bear; wherefore I prevailed on my mothers indulgence to let me regain what I had lost at home, which she consented to. But perceiving my lecherous inclinations, by my night practises with her Maid, resolved to send me to a boarding School: For our Family being but small, I lay with the Maid, being so young my Mother did not in the least suspect me; but my too forward Lechery would not let me lye quiet, pursuing her frequently to the Squeak. In fine, I was

sent away a great distance to a very severe and rigid Master, I no sooner commenced Schollar to this Tyrant Pedagogue, but I was kept close to my Book, and lest my Wit should be any ways dull'd, my Stomack was always kept sharp; which quickned my inventions to supply what was deficient. There is no complaint so unsufferable as the grumbling of empty and dissatisfied Guts, my greatest care was to insinuate myself into the favour of the servant Maids, knowing they lov'd to play at *smal games* rather than stick out. I performed my business so well, that my Stomack was always satiated, when the rest of the Boarders were dissatisfied, often going to bed in a manner supperless: Here I was depriv'd of my old pilfering way, because I had no convenience for the disposal of what was stole, it being but a very small Village. However to keep my hand in use, I daily practis'd on Fruit, sometimes with a spar sharpened at one end, I pickt the Apples out of the Baskets: other times I took with me a Comerade, and then thus would we do, I would go to the Fruiterer and bargain with him for a penny worth or more of Apples, receiving them into my Hat, pretending to draw my money out, I did clap my Hat between my Legs, my Partner perceiving that (as we had afore plotted it would be) behind, snatcht it through my Legs and ran away with it. I thereupon did use to roar out as if I had been undone, and pretending to run after him to regain my Hat we got out of sight and then shared the booty. One time coming a long the Market, I saw a small basket of Cherries, I demanded of the woman that sold them what she would have for as many as I could take up in my hand; she looking upon it and seeing it was but a very small one proportionable to my stature, two pence said she; with that I laid her down her price, and took up

basket and all the Cherries therein contain'd, and in a  
 sober pace carried them away. The woman amazed  
 that she should be thus surprized by such a Younger,  
 followed me, and making a great noise, gathered a  
 conflux of People about us, and among the rest a Gentle-  
 man of quality, who was very earnest to know what  
 the matter was: holding my purchase fast in my hand  
 (for nothing could perswade me to let go that booty  
 had so fairly obtained) I desired the Gentleman that  
 he would be judge of my cause, whereupon I related to  
 him in what manner I bargained with the woman, and  
 that I had done nothing unjustly, but what was ac-  
 cording to our contract. The Gentleman wondring at  
 the pregnancy of Wit in so tender an age, laugh'd hearti-  
 ly, and condemned the Cherries for my proper use,  
 but withal paid the woman for them. I was naturally  
 so prone to please my senses, that I cared not what  
 course I took that I might obtain my desires. I apply'd  
 my self more to my wit and invention, than I should  
 have done, had I had any thing allowed me from a  
 Friend for a moderate expence. But my Mother thought  
 otherwise, knowing by infallible symptomes, the ex-  
 travaganance of my inclinations, and therefore debar-  
 red me as much as she could the very sight of money. A  
 River confined within some made Bank, deterring its  
 natural course, will (when that is overthrow'n which  
 impeded its progress) flow with the greater impetu-  
 osity: youth may for a while be circumscrib'd as to its  
 desires: but if his inclination prompt him to the en-  
 joyment of sensual delights, sooner or later he will  
 taste their relish; and better early than late. Before  
 the noon of his dayes approach, experience may re-  
 form his life and conversation; though from the dawn-  
 ing morning thereof, till the meridian, his actions have  
 been nothing else but the extract of all manner of de-  
 bauchery.

bauchery. But (tis commonly observed,) that man which in the declination of age tracks the by-paths of vice and licentiousness, seldom desists till death cuts off his passage; never leaving off doting on such false and imaginary pleasures, till the *Grim Pale fac'd Messenger* takes him napping. Thus much by way of digression.

Our Master was very antient, however resolv'd that his age should not hinder his teaching: for if he found himself indisposed, he would send for us all into his bed-chamber, instructing us there: a man of so strange a temper, that he delighted to invert the course of Nature; lying in bed by day, and walking the night, the rain seldom deterring him. On a time above the rest, a Gentleman had sent his Son five peices of Gold to give his Master for dier, &c. Our Master receiving them, called for a small Cabinet that stood in the room, which I (more officious than the rest) brought him. Having put in the Gold, he commanded me to carry it from whence I had it: which I did; well considering the weight thereof, being though small, very heavy. The Devil presently became my Tutor, suggesting to my thoughts vacious wayes for the gaining this money. At last I resolv'd to take the impression of the Key in wax: which with much difficulty I obtain'd, and carried it to a Smith four miles distant. The old Fellow (immediately upon my proposal) suspected me; (doubtless he was acquainted with such kind of devices) and questioning me what I intended thereby, I was forced to betake my self to my legs for safety, not knowing what answer to make him. The Smith seeing me run, thinking to benefit himself by apprehending me, pursued after with a red hot Iron in his hand, which his haste had made him forget to lay aside; one standing by me (just as the Smith had almost overtaken me)

seeing him come running with a hot iron in his hand, and fearing lest his blind passion might prompt him to mischief me, struck up his heels, who in the fall gave himself a burnt mark in the hand, which no doubt he had long agoe deserved; my unknown friend would not suffer him to rise till I was out of sight. My first stratagem not suiting with my purpose, I tryed a picklock of mine own invention: but that would not effect my design neither; so that I concluded to take Cabinet and all, and in order thereunto watcht my opportunity when he should walk abroad according to his Custom at night. It was not long ere I enjoyed my wishes foreknowing his intention, I got into the Chamber, and conceal'd my self under the Bed. So finding my way clear, I convey'd my self and purchase out of the house and travelled all night. In the morning I found my self near a small Town, about sixteen miles distant from the place whence I came. Thinking my self now secure, I thought it very requisite here to repose my wearied Limbs, and solace my self with the sight of what I had gotten: but it was not long after that I was solac'd for it, that comparatively to my punishment, *Bridewel* whipping is but a pastime, the first bush I came at, I went in and called for Sack, having never tasted any, and hearing much talk thereof; at which the People of the house much admired, that so small an Urchin as I should call for such costly liquor, they viewed me very intuitively; but more especially the Cainer, which caused them to suspect me. The Master of the house was acquainted herewith, who as the Devil would have it was a Puritan, and a Constable too officious and severe. Without craving pardon for his bold intrusion, he desired me I would admit him into my Boy-ships society. I confess his gray Hairs and lowre Countenance

made me at first sight, very much fear what the event of his visit would prove: However with a seeming undauntedness, I drank to him, at length he began to ask me divers questions, *Whence I came? Whither I was going? What was contained within that Cascanet?* and the like. Before I could give the resolution of what they demanded, the *Hue and Cry* overtook me: presently I was laid hold on, and my treasure taken from me: That which vext me as much as my surprisal was, I had no further time to try what kinde of taste the Sack had. Various were the talk of the People, every one spending his Verdict on me. *This is a prime young rogue, indeed, to begin thus soon,* said one; *could he have seen, when in his Mothers belly, surely he would have stolen something thence.* Another said, *forward my fruit was soon rotten, and since I began to steal whilst a Child, I should be hanged before I should write Man.* Ready to dye with fear, I was sent back to the place whence I came, and from thence to the place of execution, had not the tenderness of my age, and fewness of years, procured pity from my injur'd Master. Confid'nd I was within his house, lockt up close Prisoner in a Chamber, till that he could acquaint my mother with what had pass'd. In this time I was not debarr'd of my sustenance, though my Commons were Epitomiz'd, neither was altogether depriv'd of Society, for I was daily visited by my Master, attended with a Cat of Ninetails (as he called it) being so many cords, with which he flayed my buttocks, and when he found me stubborn or not penitent enough as he thought, after he had skined my *Podex*, he would wash it with Vinegar, or water and salt. Within a week my Mother arriv'd, who hearing of my *Rogeries*, was so impatient, that she would needs take me to task her self; but when she had unmaskt me, and



and saw me in so woful a plight, my shirt being as flax as Buckram with blood, and my tender breech plowed and harrowed, fell down as if she had been about to expire: recovering my Master endeavoured to pacify her, by telling her that great offence, required great punishments; & the way to bend an Oak, is to do it while its young I had once when young (said he) a spaniel would find out the Hens nest & breaking the Eggs sue them, so that we could never have any Chickens, at last discovering who was the Malefactor; I bethought myself of this punishment which should hinder him for ever doing the like. I got an Egg roasted so hard till the shell was ready to burn, then did I first shew the Egg to the Dog, and then clapt it hot into his mouth holding his jaws close, this so tormented him by burning, that ever after he could not indure the sight thereof; but if shown run away crying as if he had been beaten. Thus for the notorious fact your Son must be so sharply chastized, that when he thinks of stealing he shall remember those torments he once endured for it, and so frighten him from executing any such crime. Many more Arguments he alleadged to that purpose which had satisfied her well in his severity, had not natural affection interpos'd, what to do with me she knew not; wherefore she consulted with my Master, who told her, *He durst not keep me longer, the Country people bringing in daily complaints against me.* And to aggravate my Mother the more, he briefly summ'd up my faults in this manner, having had justly various accusations who drew up my indictment, Thus.

*Imprimis*, That one of his Maids having crost me (to be reveng'd of her, knowing she was a drowzy wench, when asleep not easily wak't) as she slept by the fire, I took my opportunity, and melted some glee and gently toucht the closure of both her eye-lids with



a pencil which well I knew would lock up her sight. Against the time I intended to wake her, I placed all about her Chairs and Stools, the plot being ripe, I pretended her Mistress called, the wench started up and running rubbing of her eyes turn'd top sic curvy over the chairs, getting up she engag'd her self with the Stools, and so entangled her self therein, that endeavouring to free her self, her coats rased the parts of Traytors, in discovering the hidden secrets and *Archanas* belonging to her sex; and that with much satisfaction I had seen the execution of my revenge. That this wench could not be perswaded by any means, but that as a judgement she was stricken blind for some sin she had committed privately, which then her conscience did whisper in her ear, and undoubtedly had turn'd Lunatick had she not been speedily restored to her sight by taking of the glew, which was done with much difficulty. That he going about to correct me for this unlucky and mischevious fact, was by me shown a very *histon* trick, which put him into a *sinking* condition; for having made my self laxative on purpose squirted into his face upon the first lash given: that being upon boys backs ready to be whipt, I had often bit holes in their ears; that another time irreverencing in a paper, and running to the window with it, which lookt out into the yard my aged Mistress looking up to see who opened the Casement, I had lik't to have thrown it into her mouth; however for a time deprived her of that sight she had left. That another time I had watcht some lusty young Girls, that used in Summer-nights about twelve a clock to wash themselves in a small brook near adjacent, and that I had concealed my self behind a bush, and when they were strip, took away their cloaths, making them daunce home after me stark naked, to the view of their sweet-hearts, whom I had planted

planted in a place appointed for that purpose having given them before notice of my design. A great many more such tricks he recounted which he knew but not the tenth of what he knew not. As for Example, on *Christmas-day*, we had a pot of Plumb-broth, I ask'd the Maid to give me a taste, to see how I lik'd them, *that I should*, she said ( this was the Maid I had so serv'd before with glew ) and with that, takes up a ladle full and bid me sup, she holding the ladle in her own hand I imprudently opening my mouth somewhat larger than I should, she poured down the scalding Pottage through my throat ; at present I could not tell the jade ( that she laugh'd till she held her sides ) how I lik'd them ; but verily believ'd I had swallowed the *Gunpowder-Plot* expecting every moment to be blown up. I took as little notice of this passage, as possibly I could, resolving to retaliate her kindness when she least thought on't, observ'd the Maid to carry this Plumb pottage-pot into the yard, and taking notice that the weight of the Jack was in the same yard, wound up a great height under a small Pent-house, the Jack being down I suddenly removed the weight, and fastned the Pot to the line ; so going into the Kitchen, wound it up to the top and then stop'd it, for the meat was taken up, The house was all in an uproar instantly about the pot, every one admiring what should become of it : The Maid averred, that she saw it *even now*, and none could remove it but the Devil. Others asserted ( which were infected with *Puritanism* ) that it was a Judgment shown for the superstitious observation of that festival day ; but the next day, roasting Meat, this seeming miracle vanished by the descending of the Pot fastned to the Jack-line. Another time my Master had reserved in his Garden some Choice Aprecocks not above an Half-score ; which he purpose

For some friends that intended to visit him shortly; the daily sight of this delicate fruit being forbidden, tempted me more strongly to attempt their rape: but I made choice of an appobrious hour to accomplish my design in, for my Master looked out at his window and saw me gather them, though he knew not absolutely whether it was I or no. Whereupon he instantly summoned us together, being met, I quickly understood his intention: therefore I conveyed the Aprecocks into the next boys pocket; I had no sooner done it, but we were commanded to be searched: I was very forward to be the first, though I was most suspected, but none was found about me, so that I was acquitted. But to see with what amazement the poor boy gazed, when they were discovered about him, how strangely he looked, distorting his face into several forms, produc'd laughter even from my incens'd Master, but real pitty from me, for he was severely whipped for that crime I my self committed, I could recite many more such like childish Rogueries, did I not fear I should be tedious in their relation, and burden the Reader with juvenile follies; therefore I shall return where I left off. Whilst my Mother was in a serious consultation with her reason, how she should dispose of me. I had not patience to wait the result, but gave her the slip, resolved to run the risk of Fortune, and try whether my own endeavours would supply my necessities.

## CHAP. IV.

*How he ran from his Mother, and what courses he steered in one whole years ramble. And what manner of people they were in whose Society he entred himself, division of their Tribe, Manners, Customes, and Language.*

**I**T was in *July* when I undertook this my Knight Errantry, the fairness of the Season much favoured my enterprise: thinking I should alwayes enjoy such weather, and never be pincht with necessity, I went very courageously. The first dinner I made was of Blackberries and Nuts, esteemed by me very delicious fare at first, which delighted me so much the more, having not my liberty controul'd. When night approacht it seem'd very uncouth and strange, finding in stead of a feather-bed, no other thing to lye on but a Haycock, and no other coverlid but the *Canopy of Heaven*. But considering with my self that I had no task to con over night nor fear of ever sleeping my self next morning, and so I fetcht to School by a Guard of my Fellow Scholars with a Lanthorn and Candle, though the Sun appeared at that time in his full lustre; I laid my self down and slept profoundly, not without some affrighting dreams: the last was of the Cat of Nine Tails, which our Master laid so home me thought that the smart thereof made me cry out, and so I awaked; as then the

ark, had not with her pretty warbling Notes, summoned the bright watch-men of the night to prepare for a retreat ; neither had *Aurora* opened the Vermilion Oriental Gate, to make room for *Sols* radiant Beams, to dissipate that gloomy darkness that had suffled up our Hemisphere in obscurity. In the morning I went on in my progress as the day before ; then began a shower of tears to fall from my eyes, considering how I had left my disconsolate, and almost heart-broken Mother, lamenting my loss, and fearing what fatal courses I might take : it was no less trouble to me to think that I was travelling I knew not whither, monyless, having nothing but hazel, and brambles to address my self to, for the appeasing of hungers approaching gripes. Now my thoughts I began to loath my aforementioned *Manna*, Blackberries, Nuts, Crabs, Bullies, &c. and longed to taste of the *Flesh pots* again ; but the *Devil a bit* could I get but what the hedges afforded me. All day I thus wandered about, not daring to come near any Town, having had such bad success in the last when I first rambled, and now night come on, which put me in mind of procuring a lodging somewhat warmer than the other. A Barn presently offered it self to my sight, which I accosted, and without delay or fear entered into the enchanted Castle, where I found accommodations for the most faithful and valiant Knight that ere strode Saddle for Ladies sake. Here I might I take my choice of variety of fresh straw, but my weariness would not permit me to complement my good fortune one jot, and so I tumbled over head and ears ; I had not lain there above an hour before I heard noise, and peeping out of the straw, being in a great fear I saw a many strange Creatures come into the barn, for the day was not yet shut in. My thoughts presently reminded me, that I had heard talk of Hobgoblins

goblins, Fairies and the like; and Judge these no other; and that which confirmed me in this belief, was their Garb and talking to one another in a Language understood not, (but since, I understand it to be Canting) I lay still as long as my fear would permit me, but they surrounding me, I was not able to contain myself longer, but cryed out aloud, *Great God have mercy on me, and let not these Devils devour me*; and with that, started out from among them: They amazed as much as I ran for it too, leaving their children behind them; every one esteeming him the happiest man which was the foremost. I looking behind me, seeing them following me, imagined these Devils ran upon all four and having started their game were resolved to hunt the sinful Leveret to death: Concluding them long winded Hell-hounds, I judged praying a safer way than flying and so fell instantly upon my knees: The *Gypsies* quickly overtook me, and finding me in that posture, soon understood whence their fear proceeded. They then spoke to me in a Language I understood, bidding me not be afraid; but I had heard the Devil was a Lyar from the beginning, therefore I would not believe them. They would have raised me from my devotion, telling me it was enough, and that made me suspect them the more, thinking they designed to get me out of a praying posture, that they might have the more power of me. Nothing prevailing with me, they vowed and protested they would not injure me in the least, and if I would go along with them, I should fare as deliciously as they did: this was a potent argument to perswasion, and so I agreed to go along with them back again. All their care was now for *Rum booz* (i. e.) for Good Liquor. The Captain not induring to hear so sad a complaint, did not endeavour the supplying the want complained of, immediately commanded out four able M<sup>r</sup>unders (Beggars



(Beggars) ordering them to *Arroule* (wander) to the next Town, every one going apart. Some Country-men gave them drink fearing they might fire the houses in the night, out of revenge, others (of the more ignorant sort) thought they would command-infernal spirits, and so harm them that way, or else bewitch their Cattle, and therefore would not deny them: in so much, that in a short time these four return'd laden with bub and food. It was presently placed in the middle of us, who sate circulary; then out came the Wooden dishes, every one provided but my self, but I was soon suppli'd by a young Rum-Mort that sate next me intended for my sporting mate. A health went round to the Prince of *Maunder*s, another to the great Duke of *Clapperdogcons*, a third to the Marquess of *DoxyDells*, and *Rum-Morts*, a fourth, to the Earl of *Clymes*; neither did we forget, *Hally*, *Abbas*, *Albmazer*, *Arcandam*, with the rest of the Waggoners, that strive who shall be principal in driving *Charles* his Wain. Most part of the night we spent in Boozing, pecking rumly or wapping, that is drinking, eating, or whoring, according to those termes they use among themselves. Jealousie was a thing they never would admit of in their Society, & to make appear how little they were tainted therewith, the males and females lay promiscuously together, it being free for any of the Fraternity to make choice of what *Doxie* he liked best, changing when he pleased. They plyed me so oft with their *Rum-booz* (as they called it) and pleasing me so well in giving me a young Girl to dally with, who (though in Rags, and with a skin artificially discoloured tawny) yet I was not so ignorant, as not to understand good flesh, and what properties went to the compleating a votarefs for *Venus's* service. I was so tickled in my fancy with this pretty little wanton

Companion, that for her sake, I was very well content to list my self one of that Ragged Regiment. And that which added to the inducing me to this resolution, was my want of money, and what I suffered in those foregoing hard days fare among the Nut Trees. I first acquainted my *Doxie* with my intent, who glad to hear thereof, gave it vent, and broacht it to the rest, who unanimously with joy imbraced me; and to congratulate my inauguration *tipst* to each other a Gage of Beer, and so went round. The fumes of drink had now ascended into their brain, wherefore they caught a Hogs-head and went to sleep.

As soon as I had resolved to travel the Country with them, they fitted me for their company by stripping me and selling my proper garments, and cloathing me in rags, which they pinn'd about me, with a stick here and there, according as necessity required. We used not when we entered our *Libbin* or Lodging to pull off our clothes; which had I been forced to do, I could never have put them on again, nor any, but such who were accustomed to produce Order out of a *Rable of Rascals*. Being now a *le mode Taterdemallion*, to compleat me for their purpose, with green Walnuts they so discoloured my face, that every one that saw me, would have sworn I was the true Son of an *Egyptian*. Before we marched on, let me give you an account of our Leaders, and the ranks we were disposed in. Our chief Commander was called by the name of *Ruffeler*, the next to him *Upright-man*, the next in order thus:

*Hoskers, (alias) Anglers**Triggers of Francers.**Pykyaras.**Fritters.**Swigmen.**Farkemen**Patri-Coes.**Kitchen-Coes.**Abram men**Whip Jacks.**Counterfeit-Cracks.**Prigges.**Swaddlers.**Curtals.**Irish toyle**Dommerars.**Glyammerers.**Bawdy-Baskets.**Autem-Morts.**Dixies.**Dells**Kitchen-Morts*

We Muster'd above threescore old and young, and because we were too great a company to March together, we were divided into three Squadrons. The first Squadron that led the Van, was ordered by our Commander, to flick up small boughs all the way they went, that we might know what course they steer'd. For like Wild Fowl we fly one after another, and though we are scattered like the *quarters* of a Traitor, yet like water when cut with a sword, we easily came together again. As the Switzer hath his Wenck and his Cook with him when he goes to Wars: or like a Scotch Army, where every Soldier almost hath the Genl Wife and the *Bearns* following him: So we had every one his *Doxie* or Wenck, who carried at her back a *Lullaby-cheat*, and it may be another in her Arms. When they are weary of carrying them, they take their turnes to put them in a pair of Panniers, like green Geese going to Market, or like Fish in Doffers coming from Rye. Where note, that each Division hath a small Horse or two, or else Asses to ease them of their burdens, Some of us were clad Antickly with Bells and other toys, meerly to allure the Countrey people unto us,

which most commonly produced their desired effects. In some places they would flock unto us, in great quantities, and then was our time to make our Markets. We pretended an acquaintance with the Stars ( as having alliance to the *Egyptian Magi*, the founders of *Astrologick Art* ) and that the *Ministers of Fate* were our Familiars, and so possessing these poor ignorant people with a belief, that we could tell their fortunes by inspection into either hands or faces; whilst we were seriously looking thereon, one of our *divining Comrades* pickt their pockets, or with a short sharp knife, and a horn on the thumb nipt their *bungs*. By asking the silly mild Maids questions, we gathered from their own mouths the properst resolutions, then would they admire, and in their admiration tremble to hear the Truth proceed from the mouth of such as were strangers to their actions, by which means, among some we gain'd a great respect, accompanied with fear. Did not *Astrologers* make use of such stratagems, they could never acquire so much repute among the judicious, as well as vulgar capacities. and because it falls in so pat to my present purpose, I shall beg so much patience from the Reader, as to give him a brief account of some fallacies some *Star-gazing Impostors* use to work their own ends, and delude credulous people. One whereof I knew, who rais'd his credit ( and since a considerable estate ) upon the Basis of good intelligence. He kept a Servant, who constantly attended below for the reception of such who came for satisfaction in the *Astrologickall Resolution* of questions. This mans Office was to tell the Querent, That his Master was busie above, about some grand concern, but if the Person would be pleased to wait a little while till that business was dispatched he questioned not but that his Master would Render him a Satisfactory

account

account of what he demanded; adding farther (to infuse into him faith, to credit what he said) that though report had spoken largely (and yet nothing but what this Artist hath merited) yet all come far short of his real desert, having done such stupendious things, that must needs (without injustice) be commemo<sup>r</sup>iz'd to Eternity and admired by future ages. In the mean time, this servant endeavoured to pump out of the Proponent what he came about, which being understood, he gave information to his Master, by so many times ringing of a Bell. This Item being given, the Querent is called up, and before ever he can frame his mouth to propound his question, this profound Artist prevents him, saying, I know what you came about Sir, (therefore save yourself the labour to tell me that which I know already) you have lost a Watch, a Horse; or you would know how you shall prosper in such a business whither Marriage or an employment; or any such like common question. This makes the Artist to be wondred at; and then erecting a Scheme, positively and saulily tells him what he must expect, and that he may give answers more exactly concerning stolen goods, he was in constant fee with Thief-takers, who from time to time, made him a report of what persons were robbed, what the things were, and many times gave him a description of the felon. By these practises men believed every word he delivered to be an Oracle; so that his Chamber was daily so thronged with the report of people, that in a short time his ambition pricked him on to purchases, with the money he had gained thus fallaciously. One story, very remarkable, I shall add, and then crave your pardon for this my digression. One day a young Gentleman (but of mean estate) came to him who was more credulous than wise, & more inquisitive then prudent; and having not that wealth which his prodigality required

required, desired instructions what course he was to steer to arrive at the Port of his wishes and hopes: viewing him narrowly, he perceived him to be a man of a sweet complexion, and a body well proportioned; and therefore judged him a fit subject for Female fancies to work upon. Sir, (said he) I shall give you my best advice, but I shall crave your patience for a little while; for a matter of this weight must not precipitately be undertaken: wherefore if you please to see me to-morrow, what lies in me shall be at your service: Being just gone it happened that a Stale Maid, who had more monies than beauty, and less discretion than leachery, came to be resolved of him, When she should be married: (for it seems by the sequel she could tarry no longer:) viewing her well, (though she knew not him) he knew her to be wealthy, and nearly related to persons of quality. Madam, (said he) I shall endeavour your satisfaction; and so withdrew into his closet. Having staid a while bringing out his Figger, and with much gravity looking thereupon, he thus unriddled the Mysterious meaning of the Celestial Bodies. Madam you never was much troubled with the importunate suits of amorous Visitants, (this he gathered from the deformity of her Physiognomy) they all knowing your indifference to change your condition, but upon considerable grounds; by which means you have almost frustrated what the Stars have designed for you. I hope it is but almost (said she) not altogether: for it troubled her very much to hear she should leave the world without tasting the sweets of a married life. No (he replied) for if to-morrow about four of the clock in the Afternoon you go into Moor-field, and there take a turn or two in the Userse walk, you shall there meet with a person rich & handsome, that at first sight shall fall extremely in love with you: flight him not, neither deny him his conjugal proposal.



pos'd; if you do, it will be too late to hope for an husband  
You shall distinguish him from others by these signes: His  
Complexion is fair his Eye sharp and piercing, his Hair  
flaxen, of a middle Stature. Her joy had like to have  
transported her beyond the bounds of modesty, which  
she could not conceal, but made it appear in a pecuni-  
ary expression of her gratitude for so welcome tidings;  
and so promising him to follow his counsel, she took  
her leave. The next morning the young Gallant came,  
who had his lesson given him: but before he went, he  
made him give a Bond of 200 l. to be paid upon the day  
of his marriage with that Gentlewoman; which he  
gladly consented to, and paid that very sum within ten  
days after, for according to the directions was given  
him, he met with that Gentlewoman describ'd to him  
as he had been before to her, who at the first sight of  
each other, was incapable of containing themselves, but  
mutually embrac'd (after three or four words past) as  
if he had been her (*quondam*) Dearly beloved, return'd  
from some long Voyage, and went not to their re-  
spective lodgings till their Marriage was consummated.  
But to return where I left off. Thus we rambled up &  
down the Country; and where the people demeaned  
themselves not civil to us by voluntary contributions,  
their Geese, Hens, Pigs, or any such mandible thing  
we met with, made us satisfaction for their hide-bound  
injuries. Our revenge most commonly was very bloody  
and so merciless, that what ever fell into our hands,  
never escap'd alive, and in our murders so cruel, that  
nothing would satisfie us but the very hearts-blood, of  
what we kill'd: the usual sacrifices of our implacable  
revenge, were innocent Lambs, Sheep, Calves &c. all  
which we handled more severely than Prisoners are by  
Serjeants when they are not paid their unjust Demands  
Fees, I should have said, but that by experience

I have found, they walk not according to the Rules of Antient Constitutions, but are guided by the dictates of their insatiate wills, which is their Law, which poor Prisoners must indulge, (though they rack their slender credits, or pawn their clothes) or else they must expect less kindness from them, than a condemned person about to be tyed up by the Hang-man, who will stay till he is ready to be turn'd off. A Goose coming among us, we have a trick to make him so wise, as never to be a Goose again: but let the wisest use what tricks they can, they ne'er shall make some Serjeants honest men, we seize the prey, and leave the Tragical parts to our *Morts* or women to act. The Stage on which they perform their parts, is either some large *Heath*, or *Firze bush Common*, far from any House; this being done, and night approaching, we repair to our Dormitories, or Houses of rest, which are most usually out-Barns of Farmers and Husband-men, which we make choice of in some poor stragling Village, who dare not deny us, for fear ere the morning they find their Thacht Houses too hot to hold them. These Barns serve us in stead of Cook-rooms, Supping-parlours, and Bed chambers, having Sapr, (most commonly in a plentiful manner) we cannot *Couch a Hog-head*, that is to say, sleep, without good store of *Rum-booz*, that is, drink, and having sufficiently warm'd our brains with humming liquor, which our *Lower* (Silver) shall procure; if our deceitful *Maundering* (Begging) cannot we then sing a catch or two in our own Language, of which we had good store: which for their bawdry I omit: however give me leave to instance one *Caming Song*, and I shall wave the rest, being loath to tire you to much with one thing

Bing

Ing out bien Morts, and toure, and toure,  
 Bing out bien, Morts and toure:  
 r all your Duds are bing'd awast  
 he bien Cove bath the loure.  
 ist a Dell, I viewed her well  
 She was banship to my watch  
 she and I did stall and clay  
 Whatever we could catch  
 his doxie del can cut bien whida,  
 And wap fell for a win;  
 nd prig and cloy so banshiply,  
 All she deusea vile within.  
 he boyle was up, we had good luck.  
 In frost for and in snow:  
 hen they did seek then did we creep  
 And plant in Ruffe mans low.  
 o strawling ken the mort bings then,  
 To fetch loure for her cheats;  
 ude and Ruffe peck, Rombold by Harmon beck,  
 And won by Maunders fears.  
 Maunders all, stow what you stall  
 To rome coves what so quire  
 And wapping Dell, that niggles well,  
 And takes loure for her hire.  
 And jybe well jerckt, teskrome confect.  
 For bask by glymmar to Maund;  
 o mill each ken, let cove bing then,  
 Through Ruffe-mans jague, or Laund,  
 ill cramrings quire tip cove his hire;  
 And quire ken do them catch,  
 leanaken, mill quire cussin  
 So quire to ben coves watch  
 ien Darkmans then, Bouse Mort and Ken,  
 The bine coves bings awast,  
 nchates to trine by Rome coves dine,

For his long lib at last.  
 Bing'd out bien Morts and toure, and toure;  
 Bing out of the Rome vile vine,  
 And toure the Cove that cloyd your dnds,  
 Upon the Chates to trine.

Having even wearied our selves with drinking and singing, we tumbl'd promiscuously together, Male and Female in straw, not confining our selves to one constant Consort, we made use of the first that came hand; by which means incest and adulteries became our pastimes. By this means I grew weary of the practises, and therefore resolved to desert them as soon as the first opportunity should offer it self, which was in a short time; wherefore at the present I shall say no more of them, only give me leave to give some small account of their Language. The first inventor of Curbing, as I am inform'd, was hang'd about fourscore years since: such *Gibberish* was never heard of before, in which time there hath not been wanting such, who have taken great pains in the polishing, refining, and augmenting that Language of the Devils Imps. It is a confused invention of words; for its Dialect I cannot find to be grounded on any certain Rules; and I wonder since the Founders and Practicers thereof, the cheif Fathers and Nourishers of Disorder. Yet even out of that irregularity a man may observe some kind of form, and some words do retain something of a Schollarship, as *Togeman* a Gowne from *Toga Pannus* from *Panis* Bread; *Cosaw*, *Casew* Cheese. The nonsyllable *Cheat*; we use as a Relative, as *Nab* a *Honest Nab-cheat*, a *Har*, &c. *Cove* or *Cuffin* is in general terms a Man; but by adding *bien*, which signifies good or well, or *Quis*, which is wicked or Knavish; I make the word *Cove* signify an *Honest man*, or

Justice of Peace. Pardon the expression. for they call a  
Justice *Quier Cuffin*; that is to say, as before mentio-  
ed, a wicked, knavish, or foolish man. To conclude,  
I shall here insert this little Canting Vocabulary Al-  
phabetically.

**A** *Utem More*

*Abram*

*Abram Cove*

*Auten*

*Bughar*

*Bouje*

*Bousing Ken*

*Borde*

*Baung*

*Bien*

*enshiply*

*Benar*

*Bing*

*Bing a waste*

*Bude*

*Buse*

*Bleating cheat*

*Belly cheat*

*Betty*

*Bite the Peter or Roger*

*Budge*

*Bulk and File*

*Coker*

*Cove*

*Cuffin*

*Cuffin*

*Cuffin quire*

**A** *Married Woman*  
*Naked*

*A Tatterdemallion*

*A Church*

*A Cur*

*Drunk*

*An Ale-house*

*A Shilling*

*A Purse*

*Good or Well*

*Very well*

*Better*

*To go*

*To go away*

*The Pox*

*A Dog*

*A Sheep*

*An Apron*

*An instrument to break a*

*(door*

*Steal the Portmanteau or*

*(Cloak-bag:*

*One that steals Cloaks*

*The Pick Pocket and his*

*A Lyar*

*(mate*

*A Man*

*A Man*

*A Justice of Peace*

*Cramprings*

Cramprings

Chats

Canke

Crackmans

Calle

Togeman

Joseph

Couch

Couch a Hogthead

Commission

Mish

Cackling cheats

Cassan

Crash

Crashing cheats

Cloy

Cut

Cut bin whids

Cut quire whids

Consek

Canakin

Cly the Ferk

Clapperdegcon

Culle

Dimber

Damber

Drawers

Duds

Deusea-vile

Drommerar

Darkmans

Doxie

Bolt or Shackes

The Gallows

Dumb

Hedges

A Cloak

To lye or sleep

To go to sleep

A Shirt.

A Chicken

Cheese

To kill

Teeth

To steal

To speak

To speak well

To speak evilly

Counterfeit

The Plague

To be whipt

A Beggar born

A Sad-headed Fellow

Pretty

Rascal

Stockings

Goods

The Country

A Mad-man

Night or evening

A Wench



Chap. IV.

Witty Extravagants.

Deck

Vap

Deuswins

Dup

Earnest

As tip me my earnest

Frummagem

Filch

Ferem

Fambles

Fambles-cheats

Fib

Flag

Fogus

Fencing Cully

Glymmer

Glaziers

Grannam

Gentry. More

Gan

Gage

Grunting cheat

Giger

Gybe

Glazier

Gile

Harmanbeck

Harmans

Have a Booth

Half board

Hearts-case

Hucky

Hague

To

Two pence

To enter

A pair

Give me my part or share

Choakt

A Staff

A Hole

Hands

Rings or Gloves

To beat

A Groat

Tobacco or Smoke

One that receives stolen  
(goods

Fire

Eyes Corn

A Gallant Wench

A Lap

A Pot or Pipe

A Sucking Pig

A Door

Any writing or Pass

One that Goes in at the  
(windows

A Pick-lock

A Constable

The Stocks

To rob an house

Six pence

A twenty shilling peice

A Flayl, or mans privities

A Ditch

Farke

<i>Jarke</i>	A Seal
<i>Ken</i>	An House
<i>Kinchin</i>	Little
<i>Knapper of Knappers</i>	A Sheep-stealer
<i>Kinchin Cove</i>	A little man
<i>Kate</i>	A Pick-lock
<i>Loure</i>	Money
<i>Lightsmans</i>	Morning or Day
<i>Lib</i>	To rumble
<i>Libben</i>	An House to lye in
<i>Lage</i>	Water
<i>Libedge</i>	A Bed
<i>Lullabie-cheat</i>	A Childe
<i>Lap</i>	Pottage
<i>Lurries</i>	All manner of Cloath
<i>Maunder</i>	To Beg
<i>Maunderers</i>	Beggars
<i>Margery Prater</i>	An Hen
<i>Mill</i>	To Steal
<i>Make</i>	An half-penny
<i>Myn</i>	Gold
<i>Muffling-cheat</i>	A Napkin
<i>Mumpers</i>	Gentle Beggars
<i>Milken</i>	One that breaks houle
<i>Munns</i>	The Face
<i>Nab</i>	An Head.
<i>Nab-cheat</i>	An Hat
	To take
<i>Nap</i>	Or cheat
<i>Palliard</i>	One whose Father
	Beggar born
<i>Paplar</i>	Milk-pottage
<i>Prats</i>	Thighs
<i>Prigg</i>	To Ride

Peckidge  
 Plannam  
 Plant  
 Prigging  
 Prancer  
 Praising-cheat  
 Peake  
 Pike on the Leen  
 Perry  
 Peter  
 Prigger of Prancers  
 Pad  
 Plant your whids  
 Quarron  
 Quacking cheat  
 Quiver  
 Quiver-Ken  
 Quiver-Mort  
 Quire Dove  
 Romboyle  
 Rome  
 Rome vile  
 Rome-Mort  
 Ruffin  
 Roger  
 Ridge. ously  
 Ruffler  
 Ruffe peck  
 Red shanke  
 Rom pad  
 Rome. padders  
 Rome. culle  
 Swagg  
 Sundge

Meast  
 Bread  
 To lay or hide  
 Riding  
 An Horse  
 A Tongue  
 Any Lace  
 Run as fast as you can  
 Fearful  
 A Postmantua  
 An Horse-stealer  
 The Highway-man  
 Have a care what you say  
 A Body  
 A Duck  
 Wicked or Roguish  
 A Prison  
 A Pecky Jade  
 A Rogue  
 A Ward or Watch  
 Gallant  
 London  
 A gallant girl  
 The Devil  
 A Cloak-bagg.  
 A Goldsmith  
 An over grown Rogue  
 Bacon  
 A Mallard  
 The High-way  
 High-way-men  
 A Rich Coxcomb  
 A Shop  
 One that lies under the  
 bed to rob the house  
 Shop life

Shop lift

Stampers  
Stock drawers  
Stamps  
Scoure  
Skew  
Slate  
Scremel  
Skepper  
Stow your whids

Stalling Ken

Smelling cheat  
Solomou  
Tour  
Tout his muns  
Track up the Dangers  
The Cul fuyches  
Tip the cole to Adam Tyler

Tip the Mifh  
Tiq'ith' Buttery  
Tib  
The most tipt me a wink

Trine  
Trinning  
Tick reme  
Tres wins  
Win  
Wicker Cully  
Yarum

One that stea's out of shop

The shooes  
Stockings  
Legs  
To wear  
A Dish  
A Sheer  
Straw or haie  
A Barn  
Be wary  
A Broaters house, or  
house to receive stolled  
goods  
A Garden  
The Mafs  
To look out  
Look in his face  
Go up the Stayres  
The man eyes you  
Give what money you  
pocket-pick't to the  
next party presently.

Give the Shirt  
A Goose  
To give  
The Whore gave me  
wink  
Tyburn  
Hanging  
A License  
Thre pence  
A penny  
A Silver-smith  
Milk

That much for a taste, I think it not worth my pains to insert all those canting words which are used; it is enough that I have divulged what words are most in use. Having now deserted this *Tawney Crew*; I resolved to betake my self to a new Trade; which you shall understand in this following discourse.

## C H A P. V.

*How he went a begging. What rules he observed therein.*

*What Villanies he committed whilst he professeth that mysterious Art. Coming to London he enters himself into the Society of Beggars, distinguished by these Titles, Ben feakers, Dommerars, Clapperdogeans, &c. With a short description of their manners and customs as also a Relation of a piece of theft he committed.*

**N**ecessity is a thing better known by the effects, than its character; and of all things the most insufferable: to prevent which, it puts a man on to venture upon all manner of dishonest and dangerous actions; suggesting strange imaginations, and desperate resolutions, soliciting things infamous and attempting things impossible; the product of which is only disorder, confusion, shame, and in the end ruine. But when necessity shall conjoyn with an evil disposition, a deprav'd nature, what horrid and nefarious facts will it not institute that man to perpetrate? & though he seeth monthly examples of persons condemned and executed for the like crimes he daily practiseth, will not forbear

nor desist from such irregular and life destroying courses, till they have brought him to the like miserable Catastrophe. Necessity had now deeply falsely love with me; and the young Virgin shamed and (once my Mistress) had forsaken me: for as soon as I had pull'd but one thread out of her Garment, all the rest unravell'd: and she not brooking her nakedness, changed her Master, and so totally left me. Having now obtained more than a convenient boldness, I travell'd and begg'd with very good success. But me though my life was somewhat uncomfortable without a Companion, (all Creatures coveting society, but more especially man:) at length according to my desire met with one, whose long practice in this art, besides the observations of his Predecessors, deriving his pedigree in a direct line from Prince Prigg) indu'd him with so much skill as to furnish me with the knowledge of any thing that belonged to the liberal art of begging. We straight betook our selves to the Boozing-Ken; and having bubb'd roundly, we concluded an everlasting friendship. Then did he recount to me the most material things observable in our profession. First, he tun'd his voice to that pitch which might most of all raise compassion; next what form of prayer I was to use upon such an occasion, what upon such, varying according to the humour of those persons that I begg'd of, gathered from their habit or gesture; then he told me when I came to London, he would acquaint me what places were most fit for our purpose, and what times. That I ought not to be too importunate to some, always wishing well, and loudly praying for the health and safety of Estate and Limbs of such as deny'd me also but more especially pronounce a God bless you *Majesty* and let Heaven reward what you have here done on earth if any thing is bestowed upon me. If any should



my nakedness, and cloath me in garments without holes in them. I should wear them no longer than in the Donners sight, reserving my rags to re-invest my self, and sell the other, as unfit and scandalous to our Occupation. That we should never beg far from one another, and at nights faithfully share the gains. Moreover, he inform'd me the way to make all sorts of seeming sores and lameness. That within the tatter'd raggs, there be places provided for private conveyance; some of mature age, if they have no children, rent them of such as have; but we had no occasion for this fallacy. That if I saw a door open, I should go in boldly; if I met any in the way, I should then in a very submissive manner implore their help in the relieving my want, never desiring any thing but what was of small value, one half-penny, farthing, or some broken crust, (if at a door) pretending the not eating of a bit in two days. If the passage was cleer, whip away what was nearest to hand. That the time of rising in the morning be very early, shewing my self in the street: for then will those that pass by, judge I have no other lodging but what a stall affords, that way procuring releif from pitiful minded persons, and so continue begging till the evening; when it beginneth to be dusky, if any then walk singly, accost him in a begging form; coming up so close, as that you may knock him down with a Truncheon, still carried about for that purpose; which is done securely, and many times with a good booty.

Being full fraught with these, and many more precepts he delivered, we set forth on our progress. We had not gone far, before we were surprized by the Constable, as to sturdy Vagrants, and as *hand sail* to my new Trade, we were both soundly whipt out of town. To avoid this danger for the time to come, we mist all the Towns of any considerable note in our way, and

only frequented Villages; nay at last we were forced not only to avoid them but the high-ways too: Travellers observing our garb, countenances, and weapons, which was a Battoon, suspecting us, would before they came near us, set spurrs to their Horses and ride as if the Devil drove them. Many petty Rogueries we performed by the way, not worthy the commemoration, and therefore I shall pass them over; only this I shall insert.

Travelling the Field-way, we stumbled on a Tinker and his Trull lying by an Hedge-side, I knew not what to think at first they lay so still, with much pulling and stirring then they awakened; I askt them what they lay there for? they answered me, that they were lately bitten by a Serpent near adjacent, a potent Creature mighty in strength, and of a vast proportion, who had lately stung several as well as they. It seem'd very strange to us, especially having heard not the least report hereof. To be short, I desir'd them to shew us the place of his residence, which they readily consented to, instead of this Venomous Animal, they only brought us to its representation in a sign, where a Cup of double brew'd Beer was sold, notable hungry guests. The people lik'd the Tinker and his Female Comrade well enough, but would not admit of us, till we shew'd them money: for our vestments look't like the gleamings of a Rag-merchants yard. We drank stiffly till we laid the Woman asleep again: still the Tinker bore us stiffly, she had not slept long, but up she started, pull'd up her coats, and in our presence piss'd in the middle of the room and so sat her self down, yet awak'd not, which action could not but produce much laughter from me and my Comrade. At last the Tinker fell asleep too, having added so much to his former burden that he was no longer able to stand under

under it, now had my wits enough to work on: but finding my self very drousie, for the strength of the drink had almost over-poured me, I was forc'd to advise with my friend what course I were best take to make me a little more sober: he was so well known in such matters, ( being an old experienced Pitcher-man ) that he quickly counselled me what to do, he himself being not in the least disturbed. This was his advice which he did put in practice, he got a pail full of water, and so taking me up by the heels, he clapt my head there-into; holding me in that manner so long that the *Pail* had like to have prov'd the *Ferry-boat* that should waite me over the *Stygian-Lake*; this so qualify'd the heat my head had contracted by my excessive drinking of that strong stupifying liquor, that I found it had wrought its desired effects.

After this, we ransack't their pockets, but found little in the Mans; but searching the woman in a private place between her Pocket and Placket, we there discovered something considerable. Having so done, we thought it high time to be gone, but first we resolv'd to make some sport for their moneys, which was thus, I tryed to each of their Girdles behind a Flaggon pot, and to each a Label affixt, or a paper of Verses, and so immediately tript off. The Host seeing us go out of doors with more than ordinary speed, ran into the room where the *Tinker* and his *Lady* were: he suddenly awaked them, telling them we were gone. Hearing this they hastily started up, and reeling ran to overtake us: the Master of the house seeing his pots dangling at their breech, ran after the *Tinker*, crying, *Stop'em, stop'em, Stop the thevish Tinker, stop the whore with my pot.* We were wiser than to stay to hear how the *Tinker* and his *Trull* came off, or to hear the laughter that we undoubtedly raised by this waggish contrivance, but

directed our course for *London* directly; where we arrived soon enough, nay too soon for some. This outcry soon alarm'd the ears of his Neighbors, who with the Host seizing on them, and carrying them back, gave us an opportunity for our escape. The Lines that were about the *Tinkers Pot*, were these to my best remembrance.

*Serpents but sting, or only bite so deep  
To numb the sense, so lay men fast asleep  
Wit acts far greater things. I'll say no more:  
I've paid for sleeping, Sir next clear the score.*

Those that were fastned to the *Womans Pot* were these:

*'Twas not the Serpent but Strong beer that stung:  
The vent being stop'd, the Drink wrought through the  
Bung.*

I had like to have forgot to give you an account of a merry passage that had hapned upon the road we travelled on; beating the hoof we overtook a Cart, but in the name of *Rabbi Abraham*, what think you was in it? In truth even a Squadron of the *Taterdemallion Regiment*; some pretendedly blind, others their legs tyed up in a string. A third sort having a dead Palsy over all one side. A fourth so lame as if he never had been never strung with sinews. We fell into discourse, asking them whether they were bound thus carted? they answered us: every one for his own Country, we have been already jib'd, (said one) that is jerk'd at the whipping post, and now enjoy the benefit of a Pass. The fairly rogue the Carrier observing our familiar talk made a Band, speaking to us after this manner. Why how now Gentlemen

Gentlemen, how drop you out of the Carts Arse? what, you go on foot and your Brethren ride? It shall not be; ease your legs, come I'll lend you an hand. I was about to reply when a fellow came a long who knew this Carter, and askt him what he would do, or whither he was going with them Criples. Introth said he, to tell you the truth, I am going to *Kilum* (a town it seemes on the borders of *Oxford Seire*.) Hearing this, I knew not what to think on't, but consulted with the aspect of the carted crew. Their faces discovered nothing but sence of danger; so that now I perceived their thoughts were solely imployed about their escape, which they did soon put in execution. For forthwith the strings were cut that tyed up their legs, who silently slid out of the cart one after another for fear of discovery, the blind could see there way down too, the paralitick could run as swift as a flag; the fellow drove on still, not missing his company presently, at last looking about he saw one running this way, another that way, a third contrary to either, a fourth was hiding himself in a bush, thus they were all dispers'd: D'ee here, d'ee here, cry'd the Carter, restore the Legs and Eyes you borrowed, and then run to the Devil if you can. I heard one of them distinctly answer him, I'll see you hang'd first, you murdering Rogue e're I will come near you; dunt you remember that you said even now that you were going to *Kilum*. Could you but imagine the various postures their causseless fear put them in, you would be a great sharer with me in laughter, I could not retain my self from; this story put me in minde of the like mistake, whose effects proved more fatal in the time of the intestine wars in *Ireland*: a Trooper met with a Scullogue or Country-fellow, and demanding of him whence he came, he answered from *Killwaninn*: whither art a going? to *Killmore*

said he: (these are two Towns) with that the Soldier swore he should not kill more, and so pist o'l'd him.

Coming up to *London*, we straight way betook ourselves to *Newington Butts*, but by the way, my friend could not forbear calling on his Friends in *Kent-street*; there they gave me a Nick-name; and my Comrade immediately fell to work, to put himself into an equipage fit for the employment we had undertaken. He needed not to alter his habit, but his chief aim was to make counterfeit Sores or Clymes, according to the term of Art that is given them. With the assistance of some of the Fraternity, he had in an hours time, such a leg, that I could hardly look upon it without even dropping down; and thus they made it, they took unslacken lime and sope, mingled with the rust of old Iron; these being well temper'd together they did spread it thick on two peices of leather, which they apply'd to his leg, binding it thereunto very hard, which in a short time did fret off the skin, the flesh appearing all raw; then did they take blood and rub'd it all over his leg; which being fully dried, made the leg appear all black, the sore they did only let peep out of the holes of five or six matterish clouts. He soon got us a *Doxie* too, with a couple of children, (the fitter for our purpose) the one to carry in her arms, and the other to lead. Providing for himself and me a good lusty *Filch* or *Stick*, with a hole at the end thereof, to put in a hook if occasion should serve, to filch any thing off Hedges, &c. Away we went into *Moor-fields*: he would have made me a *Clyme* too, or an Artificial sore; but my stomach would no wayes accept of his kindness. Coming into the Fields, he planted me in a convenient place, the *Doxie* with her *Lullaby* cheats in another; and himself in a third not far distant from one another, that one might catch the others *Maundering*



ling at the rebound. I observ'd my Friend and Rogue  
diligently, what he did, for my own information. One  
would have sworn he had been absolute lame, for (a-  
bout to lye down) he slid to the earth by his staff; be-  
ing on the ground, the first thing I took notice of;  
was the pitious distorting of his face into various forms  
to stir up compassion in such as passed by him; to which  
he added a most doleful noise to this effect; For Gods  
ake, some tender hearted christians, cast through your  
merciful eyes one pitiful look upon a sore lame, and mi-  
serable wretch: bestow one penny or half penny upon him  
that is ready to perish, &c. I knew not how to tune my  
voice, for hearkning to him; which he observing (when  
all the people were passed by) he held up his stick at  
me, a strong argument of his great displeasure, which  
lest I might further incur, I was forc'd to tune it out  
to some purpose. Night approaching, we left off beg-  
ging, resolving to recreate our selves with what we had  
got: in the way home, I saw a very fine peice of beef  
lying on a Butchers stall, the woman that kept the shop  
was telling a Gossips tale to her Neighbour so inten-  
sively, as I thought I might seize on my prey, and she  
never the wiser; with that I boldly snatched it up;  
which an opposite Neighbour perceiving, ran after me,  
and soon took me. I was brought back before the wo-  
man, who was so wise (forsooth) that she would not  
receive stollen goods, though they were her own; and  
so enraged she was, that nothing would serve her turn,  
but I must go before a Justice; and to add to my pu-  
nishment, she made me carry the stollen beef openly.  
Coming before his worship, my accusation was read, ag-  
gravated by many feigned circumstances, the pitiful and  
sad casts of my eyes was all the rhetorick I used in my  
own vindication, which the merciful Justice perceiving  
they were so prevalent, as to gain some favour from  
him

him ; whereupon he asked the woman what she valued her Beef at ? *Why*, (said she) *I would not have abated a penny of five shillings. Take heed what you say good woman*, (said he) *for should you swear this, it is enough to hang him. O Lord, Sir*, (said she) *I would not hang him for a world* ; than said his Worship, *You must price it under thirteen pence hal-penny* ; whereupon the Butchers Wife was content to value it at eight pence. The price being set, the Beef was conveyed into the Justice's Kitchen, I sent to Prison, and the woman put to her Oath ; having sworn, my *Mittimus* was made, and therewith sent to prison. The woman now thought she should have her Beef surely, and without any danger in the reception, and therefore demanding it ; but the Justice told her he would buy it of her, and so asked her what she would have for it : *Sir*, (said she) *five shillings* ; I cannot afford it one farthing under. *H w. how !* (said he) *did you not swear but even now, it was worth but eight pence, and do you now talk of five shillings ? a meer cheat, extortioner, &c.* Make her *Mittimus*, (speaking to his Clerk) which so terrified the woman, that she cryed out most piteously ; good your Worship, do not send me to Prison, and do with me what you please. The Justice at this lookt stedfastly upon her (who was not so old but that he could discern a handsome woman when he saw her), and indeed generally your Butchers have jolly handsome wives ; otherwise they may be ashamed to serve seven years in handling and choosing good flesh for others, and at last know not how to make choice of a fine young plump jucie bit for themselves. I say the Justice looking upon her, smiled, yet seemed to reprove her sharply, and at last pretending he had something to tell her that he would not have every one hear, carried her into a withdrawing room, where they staid

did not long but out she came and declared openly  
 that she would never desire more justice done her, then  
 at good and just Justice ( as she called him ) I had  
 own her. And as I understood afterwards, he did  
 so much right, that she sent him in an half dozen  
 Bottles of Canary, and Supr with him on her own  
 sh; I in the mean time wished them both choked  
 the eating thereof; for never did *Roman Catholick*  
 endure greater and severer penance for eating flesh on  
 Friday; then I for coveting this; I have lov'd a  
 upon the better for it ever since. For I was no soon-  
 gotten out into the street, but I had a hundred peo-  
 ple about me, crying which is the young Rogue; this,  
 is he said the Butcher, pretending to lay his hand  
 on my shoulder, but gave me a tirrable nip by the  
 y, which made me roar out so loud and so suddenly  
 expected, that my Gentleman Usher that was lead-  
 me by the arm to the *White Lyon*, starting, let go  
 hold. There was no dallying with so fair an op-  
 portunity, fear and love of sweet liberty so wing'd my  
 feet, that running instantly hereupon, I was gotten  
 presently a great way before them. The Harmanbeck,  
 watchman or Constable seeing this, unable to run him-  
 self by reason of that great load of flesh he constantly  
 carried about him, set a pack of young-yelping Curs  
 to track the scent, but they were soon all at a loss: and  
 I escap'd their clutches-

## CHAP. VI.

*Whilst a Beggar what cunning tricks he invented to stay undiscovered, and how at last served, being caught ipso facto. A Merchant seeing him begging, took fancy to him, conducts him to his House, and entertains him as his Servant.*

THE next day, I went into *Lincolns-Inn fields* where I saw a company of Rogues, cheats, Pickpockets, &c. playing at Pidgeon holes ( a game much practised there, and in Moor-fields, by such mischievous and lazy Rascals ) growing very hungry, I singled out two or three of the fittest for my purpose assisting or contriving Roguery ; a little rising ground was our counsel-table, where we consulted what stratagems would best take and were least known. Come Gentlemen said I ( for the Liberal-Science of ancient profession they studied was enough to gentile them ) what money have yee, *sine Cerere & Baccho friget ingenium*, we must have good liquor that shall warm our bloods, enliven and unthaw our congealed spirits and make our inventions and fancies as nimble as lightning. Faith said one, I have but three pence yet that you may see how well qualified I am for your company, I'll have money for you presently. He was not gone much above half an hour but merily he came to us ; sitting down he desired me to put my hand down his neck between his waistcoat and shirt, where accordingly I did, but admired to grope out there, others of Bacon, which I produced to the Company.

Very importunate I was with him, to know what it meant, and how they came there. Give me attention (said he) and I will unravel this riddle thus. Walking along the streets leisurely, strictly eying any thing on which I might seize securely and advantageously: at length I saw a good pitiful old Woman (for so she seem'd to me by her countenance) selling Bacon, who I observ'd did put what money she took into a pocket made in her Apron. Upon this sight fancy me thought suggested to me that her money was already as surely mine as if I had already confin'd it close Prisoner in my leathern dungeon. And thus I wrought my design; Good woman said I, (speaking in a whining tone) how do you sell your Bacon a pound? Seven pence (said she) whereupon I began a lamentable oration, telling her that I would willingly give half a pound but that I had but three pence; that my Master was a very cruel man, half starving his servants; come give me your money sirrah, she said, for once you shall have it so; weighing it, I desired her to put it into slices and thrust it down my back; She asked my reason for it, I told her that my Master usually search'd me, and should he find any such thing in my pockets, he would half murder me. Alas poor boy quoth the good old woman) lean down thy head towards me, surely I will do thee that small kindness: whilst she was larding my back, I got my hands underneath her Apron, and with this short knife nipt of the bottom of her pocket, and thus have I done my part to secure you both food and money. As I look'd on this base ingratitude, so I could not but tacitely within myself, both condemn and abhor such society, remembering the words of Juvenal.

*Ingratos ante cuncta pone sodales.*

Of

Of all persons we should shun most the ingrate. Neither could I forbear ( though I was joyful of purchase ) to read him a publick lecture on his ingratitude ; what ( said I ) shall we find gratitude in Be ( as in the Lyon that was healed by *Andronicus* in wood, which afterwards saved his life in the Theatre and yet shall we be unthankful ! I have read a story an *Ass* that was kept and nourished by an Husbandman at his own table, feeding him there daily ; at she brought forth two young ones, one whereof sioned the Husbandmans son, the old one ( as my thors tells me ) in the sight of the Father killed the fender and as it ashamed of his ingratitude departed house with the other and was not seen after. I we have proceeded, but that they told me if I did, would have no men of morals in their company, away we went to Beggars Hall, hard by, where call'd lustily. Fearing we should spend all the m I desired the company that some small portion be left in my hands as a stock to trade on, which consented to.

Having feasted our selves well, before we departed the next days meeting was appointed, when and where. Against the time I had made a quantity of Serp Crackers, &c. and brought them with me. When I show'd them, they all fell out a laughing to the could improve our stock by such devices. Have patience to hear me ( said I ) and then condemn you see cause ; Ever since I parted from you I been racking my invention to find out some whereby I might render my self both deserved of, acceptable to your company, and I think this my discovery will do it ; I would have you *Jack, Tom, & Will*, take an equal quantity of Crackers and Serp and anon at night let us go into the Market, w



each of you shall observe each of us : where ever we make a stand be sure you throw a Serpent, &c. at that very place ; and then will we take the opportunity of the peoples confusion and fright, and so march off with what we can lay hands on. This plot was very well liked of by all. The evening approaching ( it being near *November* ) we went to put what I had contrived in execution. The first that was thrown was where I stood, which fell into the Basket on which a Market Woman sate, the Woman starting to extinguish it, suddenly it bounced in her face, the smock whereof and powder, for a little time so blinded her, that she could not see me walk off with a shoulder of Mutton, my comrades had the like success with a Pig and a Goose. Having done enough as we thought for that time, we went to a place of our acquaintance, where we had the Mutton, Pig, and Goose, roasted, giving the Landlord the Pig for dressing, bread, and drink. we were so successful for the first, that we made several attempts afterwards not ineffectual. But in fine, I found the Proverb verified, *The pitcher goes not so often to the well, but that it comes home cracks at last.* One time I went, and having ordered them to do as they had done before, a Serpent came flying on the Womans stall where I stood and fell into her lap, which being brushed off, fell underneath her coats, and there burst, in the mean while I had gotten a loyn of Veal and was trooping off with it, the Woman missing it suspected me by my great haste, followed me and laying hands on me and her meat under my coat. O have I caught you Thief. Mistake not good Woman ( said I ) it is my such matter. For as I stood by your stall, the wild-om, which some unhappy Knaves threw, so scared me, having your meat in my hand at that time cheap-ly, I was so frightened that I ran away with your Veal

Veal to shun the danger, forgetting to lay it down wherefore pray take it again. Taking her meat, he is a pure excuse indeed (said she) but this shall not be your turn, and with that, gave me two or three blows on my chops, that I verily thought she had made me swallow half my teeth. Another that had heard our discourse takes me to task after this: come sir, you love the flesh well, but 'tis fit you should pay for it. And it is but just if you will have my flesh, I should have some of yours. Up straight he snatches a knife, and holding me by the ear I verily thought he would have markt me as he used to do his calves. My crying and praying so far prevailed, that he only kickt me to my next Neighbour, and so from one to another, so that though it cannot be said I ran the Gantlet, yet between the Panniers on both sides, I was kickt the Gantlet from the Standard in *Cheapside* to the Conduit at the lower end thereof, this unhappy adventure made me betake my self to my old course of begging, resolving yet not to deal in that trade I had little experience of.

One day as I was begging more fervently than formerly, having gotten not one penny that day, so that I found a civil war between my Guts and Stomach, I knew not how to salve up the difference; neither would they hearken to any thing but a bill of fare. In the midst of this combustion, a tradesman of no mean quality passing by, took a strong fancy to me, being extraordinarily pleased with the form of my face and body. He asked me whence I came? what my Parents were? what I intended? I answer'd him with well contrived forgeries, that seemed to give him good satisfaction, liking well both my speech and understanding, he desired me to follow him, which accordingly I did; having conducted me to his house, he presented me to his wife and intended Mistress, telling her his resolutions of

giving me into his service ; at which she bleſt her ſelf ſaying, *Prithee, Sweet-heart, from what Dunghil didſt thou pick up this Shakersg, this Squire of the body ? this thing dreſt up in ſippets ? This Scare crow, what ſhall I call him ?* ( for I am ſure I had but few cloaths on, but that were rather fit to dung ground, then to be ſent to the Paper-mill ) Said my Maſter, *reſt your ſelf ſatisfied, ſince it is my pleaſure, this ſhall be ſo ; neither can I give you any reaſon for my fancy.* Whereupon he commanded me to be ſtript, and well waſhed ; in the mean time cloaths were provided for me, a ſuit of one of the Apprentices. A great Veſſel like *Cornelius* his Tub, was filled with water to bath me, but ſo cunningly ſet by the Maids, ( though privately ) that they might ſee me all over naked. It was my good fortune to obſerve my Miſtreſs ſtanding in a private place on purpoſe to ſee me diſmantled ; and after I was waſhed, ſhe commended the whiteness of my ſkin and well proportioned limbs ; and by the conſequent, approv'd me within her ſelf, for I was then a ſtubbed Lad. Being new-clothed, and raiſed to this unexpected fortune, how ſtrangely did this vain blaſt puff up my empty head ! however, I was reſolved to carry my ſelf diſcreetly, leſt I ſhould overthrow the ſtate I was then in, which was yet well ſetled. Wherefore I behaved my ſelf very reſpectfully towards my Maſter, and ſerved him as faithfully as I could, endeavouring that my ſervice ſhould requite his kindneſs in as great meaſure as my abilities could perform.

My endeavour was not only to pleaſe my Maſter, but my Miſtreſs too, even in the meanest ſervices ; he was ſo officious to her, that I was ready to perform the office of a Chamber-maid. The maid-ſervants I obliged alſo, by doing their duty, as making the fires, ſweeping the Kitching, nimbly and willingly doing every thing they would have me ; which ſo ingratiated

my self among them, that I alwayes had their estimation among themselves. and good word to my Master and Mistress, when occasion served. Very careful I was not to report what I heard, lest I by that means invol'd my self into the affairs of others, without what it got to my self. For by meddling in others matters I should breed animosity among them, and reap hatred to my self, when discovered to be the too busie intelligence. This I looked on as an undeniable maxime, that nothing more recommends a man, than a silent tongue, (unless necessity required the contrary) a fair complacential carriage, and a faithful heart. My Master in a humour would sometimes finde fault with me, but then it was my chiefest care not to reply, knowing, that what should be alleadged as to my just vacation, would but aggravate his spirits being passionate, alwayes punctually performing what was commanded me. To try my fidelity, he would lay a pence on the Counter, or in the Window, as if it had been left there forgotten. I was wiser then to be caught so, and therefore would instantly carry him the money. One time sending me out to buy something, instead of a shilling he gave me among other money a piece of Gold; I took no notice of it then, but being gone a little way, I came running back out of breath to return him the peice; this and the like made my Master amazed at my seeming honesty. A strange alteration you will say; but all this was only to get a good esteem, whereby I might gain fast footing. What though I underwent a great deal of pains, and had my pains tried to the height? yet I gain'd much in the end, God given me grace rightly to use it, and the baseness of my nature not perswaded me to abuse it; so my credit I had gotten with my Master, by my civil behaviour, that he raised me *gradatim*, step by step. Be

ignorant of Arithmetick; he caused a Master to come to his house to instruct me, which I soon apprehended and by that means capacitated to keep his accompts, which was the thing I aim'd at, intending thereby the prosecution of my own ends, notwithstanding my pretended fidelity, and his real kindness to me undeserv'd; which puts me in minde of the conclusion of an Epitaph I have read on a Tomb, which the Master erected for the perpetual commemoration of his servants cordial respect and honesty.

*View oft this Tomb stone, since we seldom find,  
A servant faithful, and his Master kind.*

Now to the intent I might compleat my conquest of his heart, I pretended my self an Independant, not omitting any opportunity of going to their meetings; & upon all occasions would rail against Steeple-houses (as we called them) and tear the Bishops holland sleeve's to peices, calling them the impure rags of the *Babylonish whores smock* &c. I would pray mornings and evenings so loud, so late, and so early, that my neighbours could hardly sleep for me, much less those of our Family: notwithstanding all this piety, not a day past wherein I cheated not my Master. Thus did I delude his eyes with pretended sanctity, yet concluded with the Poet.

*Da mihi fallere, da justum Sanctumque videri,  
Noctem peccatis & fradibus objice nubem.*

*Let me seem just; to cheat the better shrow'd.  
Let my deceits be hidden in a Cloud.*

How much did I silly fool deceive my self, thinking my self secure, because no mortal eye saw me.

Be not thus cheated as I was, for assure your self there is no darkness so thick and obscure, which the All-seeing and Eternal piercing eye cannot penetrate.

*Cernit Deus omnia vindex.*

A passage remarkable in *Erasmus* I read to his purpose concerning a young Gentleman, whom a wanton Lady tempted, who used this expression as his last and best refuge. *Art not thou ashamed to do that in the sight of thy Maker, and the holy Angels, which thou art ashamed to do in the sight of men, We are afraid of disgrace with men, not caring for the Grace of God.*

## CHAP. VII.

*How he came acquainted with lewd and vicious Apprentices, What trade they drave together, what places and times of meeting, what devices he found out to cheat his Master; and what wayes he had to spend lavishly, at unseasonable hours, on wine, wenches, &c.*

**I** Was as officious at home, as reserv'd from all Company, never stirring forth unless called by my Masters business, till my next Neighbour man intruded himself into my acquaintance. Who so soon insinuated himself into my affections, that I was in a manner wholly ruled by him, He and I met one

time



iene abroad, and would not be denyed but he must  
 needs fasten a glass of Wine, conducting me to a Ta-  
 vern where the Drawer (as he said) was his friend.  
 After several congratulations past, order was given  
 for a pint of Canary: being gone to draw it, this young  
 man began to tell me what an honest fellow this Ralph  
 the Drawer was; which words he had no sooner ut-  
 ter'd, but I heard him cry at the Bar, *A pint of white-*  
*wine in the Rose score*; and immediatly in he brings it,  
 and in formality a glass, but we made no use of it, for  
 he was fearful his Master would discover the cheat, and  
 therefore desired us to be speedy in the dispatch, and so  
 we made but two draughts thereof. Away he goes a-  
 gain, and brings in another, not after the same manner,  
 but crying it right, bringing withal a quart bottle in  
 his Codpeice. Now, Gentleman, (said he) using your  
 discretion, you may sit and talk freely, without fear or  
 suspicion, using your glass and when your pint is empty  
 fill him again you shall not want for Liquor Ladds. This  
 something amazed me at first, till my Neighbour Tho-  
 mas told me that this was frequent, and that he and  
 two or three friends at any time could be drunk for six  
 pence a peice. Come, come you are but a Novice, said he;  
 but if you will be ruled by me. I'll shew you the way to  
 soften the cord of bondage, to make the long time of a se-  
 ven years Apprentiship seem short, by living as merry,  
 nay, more jovial then our Masters. They may be de-  
 stracted with cares how to procure necessities, pay rent,  
 and satisfy creditors, whilst we have none of these pressures  
 and disturbances on our spirits, what though we have an  
 harsh word or a smart blow, it may be a broken pate? we wil  
 make his till spring a leak for it, or his goods go to pot, &  
 break him at last too, it may be his provision is neither  
 dainty nor plentiful, nay, restrained from our liberty to  
 it only by day, we will be masters of our own at night, no-  
 wantin

wanting any thing that may conduce to mirth, or the delectation of our insatiate senses.

I ask'd how could this be done, he answered, if I would swear to be secret and faithful and become a Brother of the Society, he would not only tell me how all this (afore recited) might be performed but would likewise introduce me into the place where these jolly Elades used to congregate. I soon contented, rejoycing exceedingly at this blessed opportunity, (as I thought it) wherein I might sail in the Ocean of delight, bound for no other Port but that of Pleasure or Profit, never considering the inevitable quick-sands which such meet withal, steering that course, having no other Compass to sail by then their own fancy. Very eager I was to have him inform my judgement with what at present I understood not, but doubted not in a little time to be as forward as the foremost in any moral wickedness. First, he informed me, that I must insinuate my self into the Maids favour, so that when occasion should require, she may let you have the Key of the Street-door, or else sit up for your return, making her sensible that she doth not so break her sleep for nothing. That I must never fail coming home to gratifie her, and that my behaviour should not be either rude or lascivious, that all my expressions should favour of Platonick or chaste Love, often repeating this to her; *O that I was out of my time if it were for nothing else but to repay thee thy love! so great an acknowledgement I have of the civilities, that I hope a time will come wherein I shall make full satisfaction for all, &c.* If she be bucksome, or wantonly given, she will never be content with hopes, promises, and protestations, vows, and such like windy stuff; wherefore you must kiss, hug, and embrace her, telling how dearly you love her; and then fall to somewhat else, she may put you off at first with a *Pish, a Fye, or*  
*Pray*

may be civil; yet be so far from denying, that if you proceed not on vigourously, she will prompt you herself, to try what mettle you are made of; if dull, she will make you the Subject of her private nay and publick laughter and scorn. But be very cautious of procreation, which you may prevent several wayes. Now I tell you what manner of Persons we are that are confederates; there are few among us but what are of several Trades selected, as *Linnen-Drapers, Mercers, Woollen-drapers, Silkmen, Hosiery, Haberdashers, Grocers, Goldsmiths, Jewellers, Ribband sellers, Exchange men,* to which add a *Drawer* and an *Oyl man*, the one to furnish us with good liquor, and the other to prepare our palates for it. A great many Trades there are which signifie nothing in our Common-wealth, as *Pewterers, Braziers, Plummers, &c.* we are only for such as will profit the body, please the palate and fill the pocket, every one brings his several Commodities at the place of meeting, then do we exchange or barter one with another for what each respective person wants; either to supply his own occasion, or his Mistress: for it is to be supposed such a thing must be had; when procured, must be maintained, though to the destruction of our Masters Estates, and ruine of our bodily health. Further he added that our Masters might not detect us in the purloining his goods, you must not (said he) take too much of one sort of Commodity.

All this I liked wonderfully well, and promised to meet that day seven night at the place appointed; and so we parted. Coming home, I immediately put these prescriptions into practice; first, taking notice of what goods we had greatest quantity; and whatsoever commodity my Master forgot he had, I always secured it as my own, nay, sometimes I would try him, *there was such a person inquiring for such a thing to day when you*

were abroad, but I could not finde it, it may be he would say, we had it not; suiting my design according to desire. Having taken a thorow view of the shop and ware-house, I saw so many wayes of advantage, it assisted by a clemly conveyance, that I could snip as well as the most forward of them all.

The next thing I had to do, was to endear my self to the cheif maid, who was one of those that lay covertly to see me wash my self in the Tub, and as she confessed since, took an affection to me from that hour, It required no long time to court her into a compliance; her complexion or temperament, forcing her acceptance of any thing amorously inclined, the colour of her hair red, which colour (though I know not for what reason) I love above any: this may be partly the reason, because as that complexion hath alwayes the concomitant of a very white skin, so it hath two inseparable companions, Plumpness and Buckshinness t her skin as the usual attendant of red or flaxenish hair, as I said, was as white as witeness it self: her cheeks naturally painted with Vermillion; plump were her cheeks and lips, with a mole thereon, and a dimple in her Chin, the infallible marks of one that is willing to dedicate her self to the service of *Venus*.

Having a fit opportunity, after some amorous discourse, I desired her she would grant me leave that night to talk with her in private, having business of importance to impart to her: she condescended to my proposition. As soon as our Master and Mistress were gone to take their rest, her impatience to hear what I would say, made her soon send the rest to bed. The house being thus cleered, and all things silent as the air, when winds into their hollow Grotts repair, I acquainted her with the greatness of my affection, which I delivered with all the Rhetorick I could invent

avent, still touching that string which produced Loves harmonious-concord : so fervent I was in my expressions, and so ardent and hot in my desires, that I soon melted the conjealed iciness of her Chastity : but first there were mutual Articles reciprocally drawn and agreed upon, viz,

*That if she prov'd with child, I should marry her.*

*That I should devote my self to her service, and none else.*

*That we should both endeavour to make use of all opportunities for the enjoyment of each other.*

*That to prevent discovery, we should often fall out before people, that without suspicion in private we might agree the better ; throwing oftentimes bones at my head when sitting at dinner, because suspicion should not deprive her of the Grissel. So great was our seeming feud sometimes, that our master was called in to part us.*

After this I gave her plenary instructions, as to my affairs, which she faithfully and punctually promised to observe. Then did I put my hand to the instrument, and sealed the Articles with two witnesses.

The night was come wherein I was to meet according to promise, I acquainted my *Amoretta* with my intention of going out at twelve a clock; and that my master might not suspect me, I went to bed, but rose again at the hour promised. The first time I would not carry any commodities with me, resolving to see first what they did. Being come to the house, I was introduced by my Neighbour *Thomas* into a private back - room, amongst the associated Brethren. I was much amazed to see such variety of Wares lye upon a long table, as Silks, Stuffs, Cloth, Linnen and Wollen, Stockings, Ribbands, Muffs, Hoods, Scarffs

Scarffs, and the like. Some of them came to me, and welcomed me as a Brother, drinking to me in a beer-bowl of Sack and Sugar.

Most of the Company being met, they truckt with each other according to their convenience, furnishing themselves with what they either stood in need of themselves or their friends. Several things were offered me; I told them I had brought nothing to retaliate: they told me my credit was good, which is the soul of commerce; telling me they should have occasion to make use of me in the like nature another time. I took with me only such things as might be proper to bestow at home, on whom I had lately engaged my affections; which I presented her with, accompanied with many expressions and protestations of a never dying affection she accepted of my kindness with much gratitude, but though she could not fully remunerate me without a re-admission into her private and then particular favours, I could easily discern her inclinations by gazing of my hand, kissing as if she should devour me, the palperation of her heart, and her inflamed eyes. I ran parallel with her in the same desires, so that with much facility we two clapt up a bargain. After which I would have betaken my self to my rest in my own bed, but that was displeasing to her, I perceived nothing would content her, but that we should be bed-fellows. I soon assented to it, though to the hazard of both our credits and fortunes. I desired her to go up first, telling her I would follow instantly after. By that time I thought she was in bed, up marcht I the stairs, which creakt as if they had conspired a discovery; coming up to the highest stair, I raised my foot (being fearful of making any noise) thinking there had been another, it descended with such precipitation, that I made the



the house eccho. The Chamber wherein my Master and Mistress lay, (the maid lying in a Trundle bed underneath them) was right against the flain head. My Master had taken a dose more then ordinary of Sack, so that this noise awaked him not: my Mistress at the first hearing thereof, imagined Thieves had broken into the house; she endeavoured to wake her Husband, by stirring him, but could not, therefore thought it the best way to lye still, expecting the event. In the meantime I lay *per due*, stirring not till I imagined my Mistress asleep again. The maid concluding I durst not adventure further by reason of this unfortunate accident, fell immediately into a profound sleep. Finding after a considerable time) all things still and quiet, I entered the Chamber, dark as Hell, and in a low voice, creeping the contrary way, I cried, *Where art?* here, here, said my Mistress, in a whispering tone: minding from whence the sound came as near as I could, I directed my foot-steps to that place: the same words being repeated, conveyed me exactly to that side of the bed whereon my Mistress lay. Taking her about the neck, I kist her a thousand times: not perceiving my mistake, I made all the haste I could (and all too little) to undress my self; which was done in an instant: opening the clothes to come to bed, *Hold*, said my Mistress, *I have a bed-fellow already; what I have suffered you to do, was only as a tryal to understand what you intended.* (Get you gone to your own bed for this night, and I shall talk with you farther to morrow. I durst not reply, not daring to stay longer, but betook my self to my own chamber, posselt with fear and shame, I nothing but tost and tumbled all that night, taking not the least rest.

In the morning early I was up, shewing my self  
more

more than ordinary diligent. But Lord, what a confusion I was in, when I saw my Mistress come into the Shop ? I made an hundred pretences to stoop behind the Counter, and rectifie disordered Wares : So basely I was with my back towards her that she could not have so much as a sight of me. At length she comes up close to me, and turning me about, said, *Indeed you take too much pain ; you are too laborious ; fair and softly ; there is a great while to night yet : desist a little, I must have a word with you.* Hearing this, I presumed to look in her face, and was overjoyed ; for from thence I received a most alluring smile, in stead of a killing frown. This re-armed me with confidence, compelling from me these expressions :

*Most respectful e Mistress, I do with shame confess my self in a great errour : but if you will consider that the cause thereof was irresistible ; I hope you will in some measure mitigate my crime. My very youthfulness speaks my Apology. You cannot be ignorant of the fervent heat of young blood, which sometimes boyls beyond its bounds. Besides the temperature of my body, (being of a Sanguine complexion ) did add much fuel to that fire*

She admired to hear me speak in such a Dialect ; but laying aside her wonder, she bid me tell her the whole truth, and what Contract we had concluded. I equivocated in my relation, intending to excuse the Maids forwardness, and that I only designed to surprize her un- wares. This Sophistry of mine did not in the least prevent my Mistresses prying wit, and quick understand- ing, from searching out the truth, tracing every mean- der, finding it out at last, though involved in a Laby- rinth of obscurities. She told me plainly she knew all, though I endeavoured to conceal it, and desired me, in

stead

stead of commands, to withdraw my affectionate thoughts from her, since her resolution was to divorce our persons. Adding moreover, that if I was so amorously inclined, as not content without a Female Object to exercise my passion on, I should elect such a one, whose merit grounded on Beauty, Birth, Wealth, and Power, should command my love, and finally eternize my terrestrial happiness; and so vanish from me, leaving my cogitations to their operations.

Forty five years had not totally destroyed her beauty but there was still remaining the ruines of a good face: Her Birth, though from a high extraction, had little influence over me, had not her Wealth (which she had at her own disposal) whispered in my ear more than a common felicity. Her last words left a deep impression on my imagination, which were not so enigmatically delivered, but that I could easily interpret them advantageously enough to my purpose. I resolved within my self to atquiesce, leaving this affair to time, to bring it to perfection.

The time being come again, for the meeting my Snipping Brethren, I went prepared with what I could conveniently carry with me. Seeing me come well fraught, my merchants presently clapt me aboard, resolving not to let my commodities lie long on my hands, our truck was soon agreed on to our mutual contents. Then like true Sons of *Bacchus*, we trouled the full bowles about, wishing him that Pledged not his fellow, in a dark rainy night on a tired Jade bare ridged in a dirty lane, with a pocky Whore behind him, & his own bones rotten, nine Miles from an house, not knowing one step of his way, nor having one penny in his pocket. This, or the like dreadful execration, made us tumble of whole bores like so many thimbles full. Half dozen of these a piece, were a *preludium* to our supper which

which usually was composed of the choicest viands. Neither could we eat, without our female Confort, whom Wine and Musick waited on. After Supper we fell again to our old *Bacchanalian* sport drinking, Dancing, or privately treating our Mistresses at a very real Banquet. When we had drank our selves to ebriety, and satiated our lustful appetites, we betook ourselves to our respective habitations, our Masters dreaming of our night Revelings. Our own expenses were neither valuable nor comparable to what our Mad-Dames put us to, which were so great (tho' they made me rack my invention to supply their pretended necessities) that all my various endeavours could not answer their expectations. I had taken a Gentlewoman a Chamber, for which I paid three shillings a week, and upon the bare promise of a Whore that she would prove constant to me, I allowed her a weekly pension besides; I never came to receive a private favour, but I must return her for it, some special and particular courtesie; as a Scarfe, an Hood, a Ring, a Whisk, or rich Lace for her Smock. If I failed any time of paying, I should be severely checked, sometimes threatned, at the least denyed my accustomed Familiarity; then she would pretend that she had refused many eminent Matches merely for my sake, that now she saw her self meerly deluded, and therefore would endure it no longer; and would tell my Master all the proceedings. If I had performed the more and not presented her when I came with some other gratuity, as a work of Supererrogation, she would have ride my Courtship, telling me, *I was an empty fellow that I bestowed my favours on others and that made me so sparing to her.* And that she scorned to be a cooper in my heart; when she thought she had sufficiently nettled me, (fearing to streign my passion too high

then a little comply clapping me on the cheeks, calling me Smock-face Rogue, come hither Sirrah, I know what you would have, I'll save your longing. Such sweetened words soon over powered my sowreness: and notwithstanding my intended hardness, I could not forbear melting in her arms.

Now since opportunity offereth it self so apposately give me leave to lay open this sable Female, on whom a strong ascendancy of *Mercury* and *Venus*, had bestowed so liberal a Talent for Whoring, and Cheating, that few escaped her circumvention that came into her company. The Relation I shall give of this miracle of Female subtilty, will be much advantageous to all sorts of persons. By this those that are viciously inclined may be advised into a Reformation before they have occasion for Repentance: And they who defying all Admonishment, and are resolved to be wicked in spite, may out of an apprehension of the ensuing danger and punishment, be deterred into caution, &c.

---

## A

SHORT SURVEY OF A CUNNING  
W H O R E

W H E N first I made my self acquainted with her, I thought my happiness not inferior to the Grand Seignors, for although he had in his Seraglio the enjoyment of an hundred or more of the most select beauties of the Universe, yet did I Fancy all those external glories contracted into one, and possessed in matchless Mistress. As she was fair, so well featured, sprightly and young, four dangerous advantages, which they are accompanied with Wit, Dissimulation, Craft and Impudence, with a covetous desire of enjoying what others possess. She could not be ignorant of her Trade, since her Mother was a profest Bawd from the time she brought her into the World. Taking notice of her extraordinary handsomness even from the Cradle, she resolv'd to dedicate her to the service of Venus, not doubting but the bent of her nature would render her very capable of that employ; Being about thirteen years of age, her beauty was so much taken notice of, that her lovers swarmed about her. The old Bawd's Mother was so overjoyed to see so large and good a Troop of Cupids Lancers, her daughters life-guards, and doubted not but that she should obtain the pleasure of fruition of her hopes, and therefore entertained them all, yet watching them so narrowly, that none should taste her fruit unless they bought the tree at a dear rate. She so well observed her daughters natural policy, that she was well assured her insinuations would in a little



time command both the hearts and purses of those who courted her. Her design proved as fortunate as she could wish, in as much as among the many that languished for her, there was one so wealthy as that he never knew the want of a thousand pound, whose heart was inflamed by her eyes.

She had now assumed the title of Madam, which one should think belonged to none but who are nobly extracted, however, why should she baulk it, since it is an honour costs little or nothing, and as soon conferred as spoken. This Gentleman was so insnared by the witchcrafts of a lovely face, that though he knew the profession and practice of the Mother, and the Daughters want of honour, honesty and wealth, yet he resolved upon a marriage within few days without the return of solemnity of Treaties. When there was a firm contract concluded between them before witnesses, the charitable Bawd his intended Mother in law, came to him, and told him if his stomach was raw and could not stay so long till the meat was served up with the usuall ceremonies, he should have a bit for a stay, and taste before hand, the proposition was not unwelcome to him, wherefore he instantly took earnest of the happiness he vainly believed would bear him company *durante vita*. Not long after they had their nuptials celebrated, and that he might not disparage himself in the Worlds eye, as to his inconsiderable choice; he bought his wife in his proper charge, new cloaths, splendid enough you may guess, with the appendixes of gallantry, rings, jewels, &c. and so brought her home to his house in such state. She had not long lived with him, but she followed the dictates of a Luxurious disposition, and Libertine, hating to have her liberty circumscribed or bounded, especially by one so remote to her nature and unsuitable in years, wherefore under

pretence of visiting this friend and that couzen, she blinded her old Husband by this plausible excuse that she made her frequent sallies a broad pimp for desires. Her Husband observing her often gaddings and profuse expences, could do no less then suspect that then he was willing to understand, and therefore not only abridged the liberty she took, but devested her those ornaments he had bestowed upon her, which animated her to revenge, that she resolved not to slip the first opportunity. She soon got acquainted with one suitable to her purpose, a person as much engaged in debauchery, as his credit was in the world yet so pleasant he appeared in her eyes, as that a little courting made her wholly at his devotion. Hence we may observe the dangerous consequences of disproportion of age in matching. Surely there can be no agreement between fire and water, between freezing Winter, and Scorching Summer. Besides when a man comes once to have mean thoughts of her Husband (upon any account whatever) She is then in no way so affect any body else. She now not only slight but hated him, which made her launch out into all excesses that exasperated, and vicious Women can imagine or contrive, from whence she may rather derive satisfaction or advantage, neither could she want assistance or counsel, as long as the old experienced Brwd her Mother lived.

This good old Dotard finding himself so abused that the whole world must needs call his reason in question; if he suffered any longer his loose wife's Career thus in Luxury and Wantonness, resolved within himself to call her to a severe accompt, intending at first to reduce her by kindness, as well as sharpness and so equally to temper his frowns with smiles, she should not tell which of these two ingred-

were most powerful in the effecting the cure of his sick-wanton.

Returning one evening from her revels abroad, the Cuckold took her to task ; sharply reproving her for her gaddings, her Tavern meetings, with debauched and licentious persons ; her lavish expence in paying reckonings where ever she came, but especially her applying the necessities of lusty younger Brothers, which resupplied hers. The old man had so spent his spirits and breath, in schooling his Lecherous Truant, that he was forced to conclude his wormwood Lecture with an excessive cough ; the inseperable companion of him and Age. My bucksome Madam fearing he was raining for more of that displeasing stuff, which had lately offended her ears, left him half strangled with Tylick.

In this Interval, a Female Neighbor of his came in, a Gentlewoman of that worth ; that Virtue and Generosity contended in her for priority : *How is it I pray* (said she) *I am much troubled to see you in this condition ?* You lie, you lie, you Whore (said he) his ears being so fur'd by time, that he could not distinguish his Gentlewomans voice from his Wifes, neither could he see, his violent coughing having forced down a torrent of moisture into his eyes ; that his sight was totally drowned : continuing his railing ; *See me in this condition ? I beleive you would be glad to see me* (said she) *not it, you Strumpet, lump of leachery, cheat, she-devil, what shall I call thee ; there is no name too bad, and* she cought again so violently that it was in vain to speak to him, but when this violent fit abated, she returned to say something, though her amazement to hear her husband in the neither deserved, nor expected, would hardly give her permission. At last she spake to him, and reasond with him, why he should thus stain her honour

which was hitherto spotless, undefiled; that her actions had ever been so far from rendring her, what he unworthily represented, that they made her famous, and lookt on as a good example for her Neighbours to follow and immitate. I, I; infamous you mean (said he) and let me alone to make you such an example, that you shall have followers enough to see you Catted you Bitch Whore. Why, who am I said the Gentlewoman, that you thus abuse me? *Am I,* (said he) you are Touch-wood, Tinder, Salt-peter, Gunpowder, Wildfire; nay, worse then all this my Wife.

By this the Gentlewoman verily concluded him to be mad, and fearing least his frenzie might be converted into fury, was thinking to slip from him just as his cough left him, and his eyes again restored to him with the insight of his mistake; which made him more condemn his fallacious age, that had put this trick on him.

Apologies (as many as this old mans sterile invention could frame) were not wanting to excuse his absurdity and error: Neither was his Wife without the height of Mirth behind the Hangings, to see how much her doting fool was mistaken; who had no patience any longer to discourse his Visitant, but abruptly left her in quest of his abused Wife as he supposed, imagining from this grand mistake, that what ever before he had either seen or heard of his wife, was nothing but the genuin product of his idle and jealous brain. After he had made a strict enquiry through the whole house for his wife, he at last found her out cloistered in a Garret, into which she conveyed her self coming softly behind the Hangings wherein she had hid her self; & the better to colour his intended Villany, hearing her Husband ascend the stairs she put her self into a praying posture.

The old man seeing her on her knees, had like to have broke his neck for haſt, not minding ſo much the diſturbance he ſhould give her (pretended) devotion; the ſatisfaction he enjoyed to ſee his miſtake confirmed. Being out of breath, his diſcourſe was abrupt and broken, neither did he know which was moſt expedient either firſt to queſtion her, or crave her pardon: at length he threw himſelf at her feet (for indeed he could hardly ſtand upon his feeble Legs;) and hanging down his Head (I knew not whither he cried) a fair Rhume gushed through the pore holes of his Head, which looked like ſcalding Teares; and ſo they might be, for by their burning heat, any might conclude the loſs of the hair of his Eyelids, and that thereby the wriveled ſkin of his Countenance was parcht. It was long time ere he could ſpeak, and no wonder, ſince this was the ſecond time of his Infancy; but at length with much ado, with a look as pittifull as his Rhetorick he asked forgiveness. She ſeemed ſtrangely ſurprized and not only wondred at, but taxt him for the Irrationality of his Petition. The pretence of her ignorance in what had paſt, made him the more eager to diſcover his ridiculous folly. In ſhort, he gave her to underſtand, that ſince he was miſtaken in a thing ſo palpable, he might very well queſtion whether all former reports, &c. his own evil opinion of her, might not be poſited on the ſame baſis of falſhood. That for the time to come, he would never admit of jealouſie within his breaſt, and to get a full confirmation to what he proteſted; he immediately delivered her his keys, committing to her truſt that he had of greateſt value. This cunning Quean would not accept this kind proffer, but with much preſſing, and then ſealing his pardon with a kiſs, an everlaſting affection was ſeemingly agreed upon.

For two or three months after ſhe behaved her

self so well, that had her Husband had *Argus* his hundred eyes, he could not perceive any thing that might blemish her reputation or trouble his head.

Her Cue being come to enter and act her part on the Stage of deceit, she appeared and managed her business to the purpose. For having given her Mother a Catalogue of those rich things she had in her possession; she never left her Daughter till they had conveyed all away which might be carried in the day time without any notice taken; and at an appointed night getting the servants to bed and delivering the key of the Street door to the old Bawd her Mother, she played the part of a woman in general, by lulling her husband in bed, by dissimulation and flattery, in a fond opinion of her cordiallity to him, whilst her Agents then were leaving him as naked of goods, as he was at that time of Apparel. In the morning she arose by times, before the old Man was stirring, and went instantly to her mother who had provided her lodgings. Then did she change her name to hinder detection, and that she might add to her security; she never went abroad but with her Hazard Mask, and in as many varieties of Suits as there are months in the year, which though but 12, yet did she make them ring as many changes as *BOW BELL*.

Not long after she had played this exploit, it was my unhappiness to be acquainted with her, by coming accidentally to our Shop, where buying some wares it was so ordered that I must bring them to her Chamber. According to the time appointed I waited for her, but found my self extremely mistaken in my Chapwoman. For instead of paying me for my commodity, she would have truckt with me *Waste Ware*; which I would no wayes assent too, finding me no fit person for her purpose, she dismiss me by charging the debt. This passage did so run in my



mind, that I could not be at quiet till I had purposed time to visit her, and indeed I was forceably prickt thereunto by those matchless features I saw in her incomparable face. My Master riding out of Town I found a very fit opportunity to make my address to her, which I thought would be the more welcome by bringing a present with me.

Her memory was so good that she knew me again and quickly guessed at my errand, and indeed I was not long in the discovery thereof: there were but two words to a bargain and so we struck up the business: to much delight I took in her at that time, and she in me, that we interchangeably promised each others constancy of affection.

Mine and my Females extravagancies made me inquire as many wayes to chear, as we had wayes to spend what was this way gotten. If I had heard any friend of my, they must by a Gown, I had my Mercer ready for that purpose; if a Suit and Cloak, my Draper, and so like: sometimes telling my friend, that I was acquainted with one, that would sell me a far cheaper than any worth than any one else; other times, that such one owed me some moneys, and that this way I could both pleasure my friend, and hedg in my own pocket. Though I drove a great trade this way, receiving ready cash, yet this would not do alone. As an assistance I guiled the money box every day, receiving my part first, before my Master should take his, which usually he did every night, putting it into his Till. I could not sleep for thinking how I might be intimately acquainted with the inwards of this Till. Several projects I made tryal of, but none suited my purpose so well, as a Barbers pair of Curling irons, I got a file from a Smith, and to work I went with my Curling-irons, filing them to slip in easily, and to turn round.

The first Essay I made thereof, had like to have put me into an extatic for joy. I laid them upon their edge, opened them wide, I pincht the money below; holding fast, I turned them on their side, and so drew up the money to the mouth of the Scotch: now because there was many times so much, that it would not come through, with a knife I would slide away peice after peice, till I had fitted the money to the narrowness of the passage. I seldom brought up at a time less than three shillings, a good draught, not ceasing till I had gotten twenty or thirty shillings at a time or more, according to the quantity of the stock. Finding my Engine act according to my desires, I could not be content without congratulating my success. My Master was seldom at home, wherefore I askt my Mistress to go out for an hour, promising her not to stay beyond my limited time: She consented, and I over-joyed pickt up a Rambler of two, and away we went to the nearest *Ralph*. Being glad to see us, planted us in a convenient room fit for his purpose. There was never a player he scored at the Bar, but he had a Quart-bottle in his Breeches for it. They all wondred to see me so frolic, but I thought it wildome to conceal the depth of my practice from them.

After we had drank very smartly, I came home transgressing but a little beyond my time. My Mistress was very well pleased, telling me, I should have had another time, since I was so punctual. Those bottles of Sack we drank, ran perpetually in my minde: for it was the very flower of Wine. In the commemoration of my friends courtesie, and the goodness of that liquor, I gave my contemplative fancy leave to characterize a Bottle of Canary, thus

## THE CHARACTER OF

## A Bottle of Canary.

HE is a Gentleman I assure you well extracted, which once lived like a Salamander in the midst of the flames, and had he not been burnt he had never proved sound. He seems a prodigy: for that which we live by, decays him; hating Air as *Bacchus* hates small Beer. He will lye still if you smother him, and is never so well, as when his breath is stoppt. Bury him, and you make him quicker. As for his habit, it is ever plain yet neat: though nobly born, he scorns not to wear a green coat with a badge on it; and you cannot injure him worse than to pick a hole in his coat. Though he wears for the most part one sort of Garb, yet he is never out of fashion, acceptable to the best of company, not regarding his outward dress, but valuing his inward worth: however his Suit is made of admirable Stuff, for his out side never grows barer, and his linings are the fresher for wearing. So choice he is in his cloathing, that he rather chuseth to have his braine crackt out, than to have a rent in his Garment. He wears an a la mode Hat, as light (and almost as little) for his Shingle-cock, which he puts off to none: but like the Quaker when brought before a Magistrate, hath it taken off for him.

As for his Pedegree, I know not how to derive it; for he hath had in him the best and purest of the French blood, but will now acknowledge his Race only from the Spaniard, whom he imitates, being

being statly and standing alwayes upright; treads for the most part on Carpets, and never stirs abroad but when he is carried, yet full of activity. If he runs fast and long, the more winde he gets, if he chance to fall, which is seldome, for many looks to him, he will be extreemly moved, yet (contrary to all men) the fuller his belly is, the less hurt he receives; his credit is large never paying for what he wears, running on the score perpetually; his conditions are a riddle; there is in him pure vertue, and notorious vice; the quintessence of love, and the venome of hatred. He is the beginning and the end of a thousand quarrels in a year, yet a very Coward; for he suffers any to take him by the ear, and never broke any ones pate, but when company was by. He is very facetious in society, and will spend himself freely to the last drop, if a Ladies soft and warm hand will raise him, he is a brisk spark, and therefore Courtiers adore him; he is smoothe in his expression, and therefore Ladies delight in him, he is filled with nimble fancies, therefore the Wits frequent him, exhausting his radical moisture, to distill it into Poesies raptures; for conceits never run faster from the Limbeck of their brains, than when this Gentleman adds fuel to the furnace. He wets wit, yet dulls it; creates new fancies, and stupifies. Gives the Orator a fluent tongue and makes him speechless. Gives a Poet fire till he cannot go. And as he helps Minister to preach, so he likewise silenceth more than the Spanish inquisition. He hath a great many tricks in him: he will make a Faulkner flye high within doors: makes a Huntsman catch a Fox by the fire side. Whatever he holds, he makes good; and unless you minde him well, much good matter that falls from him may be lost: for he is often fluent beyond measure. All tongues court him, and those that look narrowly unto him, shall find him

no dry Fellow. The truth is, he is too profound for shallow brains to meddle with him: he will pour out quaint expressions and hard words so thick, that the best Schollars are glad at last to give him something to stop his mouth, yet hold him up fairly, and you may get all he hath out of him. He is excessively beloved and relishes all company, being pleasant, and full of admirable humours. He is inwardly acquainted with the Lord Mayer and Aldermen, and incorporateth with their Wives daily. His kisses are so sweet, that they lick their lips after him; and though his breath be strong yet it is not offensive. He is a true *Good fellow*, drinking till he hath no eyes to see with: good liquor is his life and soul, and he is never musty but for want of it, he will drink till he be filled up to the very throat, and gape whilst others put it in. He will bear as much sack as any man in *England* of his bulk; yet he will be soon drunk in company, but if you will give him leave to vomit, he will take his liquor and drink fresh, till all the company be forced to leave him. Drinking is his hourly exercise, seldome lying out of a Tavern. He is the main upholder of Club-meetings, without fear of being broke. He picks mens pockets, yet is never made more reckning of than by such Persons. As for his Estate. I can only say this, that all he hath he carries about him; yet generally he is reputed rich: what he hath, he holds upon curtesie; but what he gives others, is held in *Capite*. What he possesseth is commonly upon sale; yet more for plenty, than for want; and if you can purchase him, you purchase all.

I could never indure idleness. I was ever in action; either writeing or contriving, or putting into execution my contrivances; I thought it better *male agere* *quam nihil agere*, my brains or hands were continually working and very seldome but actually, my pen was generally

generally so happen in discoveries, that my wit was much applauded, by the most censorious, much respected I was, and my company much importuned by the Tanker-bearers of *Helicon*; by which means I swelled with Pride, that I thought my self little inferior to *Apollo*, I called *Mercury* pimp, the nine Sisters Whores, whom I had frequently layn with and might when I pleased, the best title I could bestow on. *Pegasus* was *Hackney-Jade*. In the height of this my opinionativeness, my Cooler (our Masters maid came to me where I was alone) and after many heart secht sighs told me she found her self with child; which news had like to have deprived me of my understanding: but knowing that vexation never remedies but rather adds to trouble, I was resolved to bear it patiently and find some means to preserve her and my Credit. I framed a Letter as from her Father, desiring her to come down into the Country speedily, if she intended to see him alive; and according as we had laid the Plot she shew it her Mistress, desiring her leave to shew her duty to her dying Father. Our Mistress most willingly consented threunto, as knowing that there was more than ordinary love between us; the maid had staid as long as possibly she might without discovery; lacing her self very straight, and keeping down her belly with three Basks: but now she made haste to rub off, I had provided a Midwife that should be her Bawd too: but this could not be done without extraordinary cost. After her delivery, I found the keeping of her and the child very expensive: then did I begin to consider what a vast charge, and how many various troubles this momentary lecherous pleasure draws upon a man: how furiously he is upon the onset, and how quickly satisfied, loathing that Object he a little before longed for. Well I bethought my self how to be rid both of Cow and



Calp. I told her I would get together what moneys I could, and so marry her, upon this condition she would be willing to travel with me whither I went, which I knew was her only desire: I informed her of my intention to go for *Virginia*, and the reasons that induced me thereunto.

First, her disgrace would not be known there: next, my Master could have no power over me; insisting further on the pleasantness of that continent, and the plenty of every thing, &c.

She assented to all I propounded, relying her self solely on me to dispose of her as I pleased. To palliate my design, I went with her to *Gravesend*, pretending as if I was then going with her beyond Sea, for no other end but to clear my self from her there, knowing that after she had past examination, or search of the Block-house, she would meet with no more. Being aboard, I suddenly seemed to have forgot something ashore; having well laid my plot upon the basis of a good sum of money, I had distributed among the Seamen with a considerable present to the Master, and telling my *Landabris* I would return to her instantly, I got into the Boat, and immediately after the Ship wayed Anchor, and quickly was under sail. I confess notwithstanding the Devil had at that time the total possession of me; yet I was much troubled at what I had done so hard heartily and cruelly. A flood of tears did so overwhelmed my sight, that I could not discern the Ship in which she was: so sensible I was of the wickedness of this Fact, that *Dido* like, I could have thrown my self into the Sea after her, had not a good Woman, whose Husband was in the same ship, prevented me. Observing my tears, 'Tis probable, Young Man, (said she) you have lately taken your leave of some dearly beloved Friend; and I guess, by your earnest looking

ing

ing after yond Ship under Jail, the person was in her, told her it was truth, my husband is in the same Vessel (said she) and therefore I have as much cause to grieve as you. Come be of good comfort, man, friends must part, and it is better to part here than at the Gallows. Go along with me, and we will drown sorrow; and with a glass of neat Canary, antidote our hearts against any thing that may disturb them.

With that I lookt intently in her face, and found it correspondent with a jolly temper. An eye black and peireing; and eye brow black also, and each as big as mans thumb comparatively: a sign that never failed to denote that woman capable of giving a man the greatest delectation. She was every way compleatly handsome, and suitable to the desires of the most Critick in Love-affairs, I thought it a shame to deny so kind a proffer, and a crime in youth unpardonable not to embrace that opportunity, that shall lead him by the hand into *Venus* her bed-chamber. With that I address'd myself to her, (and afterwards undrest together) declaring that the force of her Rhetorick, assisted by her eternal, beautiful, and altogether lovely form, had forced me to forget my own dearly beloved She-friend, and become her Proselite, her absolutely devoted convert; and would prostrate my will to be guided by her and her command. With that we concluded to follow ourselves at the next Tavern, I applyed my self to the old way of insinuation: which soon melted her, so that I saw I might when I pleas'd stamp loves impression on her, returning to Gravelend we soon lodged our selves conveniently for our purpose, having so done, I considered the matter that there was not any thing wanting that might please our senses. Yet fearing lest her love should cool again, there was no Art forgotten that might serve to entertain it. Delays in love affairs are dangerous

dangerous : women love not to be too long tantalized ;  
 there is a certain critical time to know their inclinati-  
 on ; which if you punctually observe, you shall assu-  
 redly reap the fruits of your desires ; if not, you may  
 perpetually wait, but never enjoy the like opportunity.  
 Wherefore the iron growing hot, I thought good to  
 strike to enliven my spirits, the sent for a noise of Mu-  
 sic, ordering them to play in the next room. And in  
 the end we began to think of some repose, agreeing  
 before to lye in two chambers contiguous to each o-  
 ther ; which were accordingly provided. As soon as I  
 thought all the household were in bed, I repaired to my  
 mistress, who eagerly expected my coming ; approach-  
 ing the bed side she clasped me in her arms : as soon as  
 I broke, I arose, bespeaking a fat Capon swaddled  
 with Saffrages, and a quart of buttered Sack. I got all  
 ready by the time of her rising, she was extraordinari-  
 well pleased in my double diligence of serving her,  
 being applauded my industry and care of her, we fell  
 to it, interlining every bit with a Glass of Canary. She  
 told me she would never part whilst she had a penny  
 left, having about her some thirty peices of Gold.  
 Well (said I) my Dear, since it is thy resolution, a match,  
 let me be Steward : which she agreed unto, deliver-  
 ing into my hands what gold she had. For two or three  
 hours I shewed my self very officious in my place ; but  
 considering that when this money was spent, we should  
 know what to do, I thought it was better for one  
 to want than two ; besides I had lately surfeited on a  
 dollar, and therefore my stomack nauseated the very  
 thoughts thereof. I had feed the Drawer to bring me  
 just as the *Gravesend* Barge was going off : which  
 accordingly he did by a private sign concluded betwixt  
 us. I then pretended an excuse to go down under the  
 notion of providing something novel, which should be  
 con-

conducible to our mirth and jollity. I had just some time below to write her these lines instead of a solemn leave taking, leaving them with the Drawer to present her, and so went aboard the Barge for London.

*Madam I'm gone, no wonder, for you know,  
Lovers encounters, are but touch and go.*

Arriving at Billings-gate, I went straight to a Tavern where I had an Interest with the Drawer, resolving there to consult seriously with my self what course to follow, being as yet unresolved what to do. After I had raised my dulled spirits with a glass or two, I concluded to hazard my Masters good opinion, nay, and my Mistress affection too; which though at that present it only smoked, I might easily divine, that in process of time it would burst forth into a flame. Before I was confined to my Masters time, I began to consider what an excellent thing liberty was, equally compatible with health. which two, though they are the greatest and most precious gifts (next our redemption) the Creator of the world hath bestowed on mankind; yet we poor mortals, value them not till we are sensible of their want, by being deprived of them. This is an infallible maxime, That the deprivation of a thing shall be so much the more evil, as the possession thereof is good. Now if Liberty be such an excellent and delightful thing when enjoyed, how miserable are those that want it?

Having moneys in my pocket, I concluded to experiment the enjoyment thereof, and to participate of those delights the nature of young men is most inclinable to. Now man being a sociable Creature, I thought I should reap but little satisfaction to my self in the

presence of my moneys without an associate; wherefore  
 sent to an Apprentice of my intimate acquaintance  
 contemporary with me, and who had often prompted  
 me to ramble with him. This Lad was his Masters  
 Caltheer, which I knew would much assist my design. I  
 made him acquainted with my intention of trying the  
 world: though it had formerly been his own motion,  
 yet he seemed at the first something startled; but all  
 his doubts I resolved, adding moreover. That to have  
 our wills enslaved to other mens, was a thing insup-  
 portable, since that we were as well as they, created  
 free Denizens of this world. That since our great  
 Grand-father was Emperor of the whole world, we  
 could not stile our selves less than Princes, and there-  
 fore debased our birth by a voluntary submission to  
 service and slavery. I had no great need of many Ar-  
 guments to this purpose; for his own inclination was  
 sufficient to perswade him. The result of our discourse  
 was a firm resolution to become two Knights-errant.  
 I advised him forthwith to go home and bring  
 with him what Cash he had in his possession;  
 which he readily performed, and indeed more than I  
 could expect, being 200 *l.* the Fates having so decreed  
 in favour this our first bold exploit, as tryal of what  
 we durst attempt.

## CHAP. VIII.

*How he frequented Bawdy-houses; what exploits he committed in them; the Character of a Bawd, a Whore, a Pimp, and a Trappan; their manner of living; and the detection of their wicked lives and conversations.*

**B**EING full fraught with money, we undertook Progreſs, promiſing to our ſelves all delight imaginable, but not conſidering what the effect would be. We frequented all places of pleaſure, but amongſt theſe, we ranked *Brothel-houſes*, which were our *Reſort*. We ſeldom were ſeen in the ſtreets by day for fear of diſcovery; conſining our ſelves cloſe here to ſome *Bubing-houſe*; at night (like ſuch cloſely delighted in deeds of darkneſs) we would ſometimes flutter abroad. Our paſtime was to hire Coaches to any pretended place, and when we came near it, make our eſcape. One time leaping out of the Coach, my Cloak chanced to tangle in the ſpokes of the wheel, the Coachman not perceiving we were got on, drove on; by the wheels continually turning, my ſuit was ſo engaged, that I, verily believed my ſuit now conferred upon me the juſt puniſhment of being executed on the wheel, which I could hardly have endured, had I not ſpeedily unbuttoned my cloak: I was loath to bid the Coachman ſtop, thinking I ſhould have it laſt; I ran Lacquy-like a long way, but all my endeavours to ſhift it, proved ineffectual; ſo that at length I was forced to cry out, *Hold Coachman.* The Coach



man coming out of his Box, soon perceived the salary, and straitways demanded his money for his hire, before he would untangle my Cloak, which I was compelled to give him. Delivering me my Cloak, he told me, *I had paid him, but he had not paid me for my attendance on him*: and said moreover, *that my Cloak would not look like a Livery unless it were laced; and with that, with his whip lashed me well favouredly*. Another sort of Pastime we used, was to kick the old Watchmens Lanthorns about the street; and it may be sometimes confer a blow or two upon their sleepy noddes, and then flee for it. We practised this foolery so often, till at length we were met with, and rightly served. It was thus: in *Paternoster-row*, we found a fellow at noddie upon a stall, with his Lanthorne and candle by him, having first seized on that, and thrown into the Kennel, we prosecuted our abuse by falling upon him and beating him. Having so done we betook our selves to flight: but here we mistook our mark, thinking him to be an old decrepid Watchman, and one that had little use of his eyes, without those of his pocket; whereas to our cost, we found him light footed as a Stag, who overtaking us, surprized us; and as he carried us before the Constable, we met with the same Round, who without much examination, commended us as Rats to the Counter. The chiefest thing that troubled us, was the apprehension of our Masters knowing where we were, but we resolved to drown our care; we had not been there long, before other men, Male and Female, were brought to bear us company,

Some of the men were all bloody, their Mobs Scarfs &c. were all rent, & none of them sober, darning & sinking in the constant flourish of their discourse: calling

for drink was the argument they held, and roaring and distracted notes was their Harmony. Though I myself was comparatively wicked, yet I blessed my God I had not arrived to that height these superlative Villains had attained to. Being in their company, I thought my self in the Suburbs, or on the confines of Hell. Sin if it be dressed up in specious pretences, may be entertained as a companion; but when it appears in its own shape, it cannot but strike horror into the Soul of any, though desperate, if not stupified. Wherefore I thought I was so far from associating my self with them, that I protest, the lewdness of their actions were so represented to me with such deformity, that I knew not which I loathed most, them or the Prison. I cannot make appear to the world what they were, nor my resentments, unless I should stuff a page or two with all manner of horrid Oaths, Execrations, Blasphemies and such like soul infecting and destroying Plague-sores; wherefore I shall onely take leave to anatomize the Place that deteigned us from our freedom. Then look upon a Prison as in it self, and it may be fitly termed a temporal hell. For as the other is receptacle for damned Souls, the gates thereof stand wide open; so this refuseth the reception of none though never so wicked a miscreant. Though my duration in this place was but short, yet I could not but take some observations, imploying from thence the faculties of my Soul, to draw up the definition of a Prison, hell is a very proper denomination for it, since it is a place composed of nothing but disorder and confusion; Land of darkness, inhabited by calamity, horror, misery and confusion; a bottomless pit of fraud, violence and stench. A prison is the banishment of civillie, the Centre of infamy and disparagement, the destruction of good wits, the treasure of despair,

ling pot of friendship, a den of deceivers, a Forrest of ravenous beasts. Here you may see one weeping, another singing: one sleeping, another swearing; every one variously employed; one eating in a corner, and another pissing just by him; another tawling himself between both. It may be heretofore a military man, and therefore loath to forget his Art, but rather exercising it in the killing of his bodily Enemies, bearing the blood upon his nail, as the Trophies of his victory.

It is, to speak most properly a living Tomb or grave to bury men alive in; wherein a man for half a years experience may learn more Law, than he can in three Terms for an hundred pound.

It is a little wood of woe, a Map of misery, a place that will learn a young man more villany, if he be apt to take it in six months, than at twenty gaming Ordinaries, Bowling-allies, or Bawdy houses, and an old man more policy, than if he had been Pupil to *Maachiavel*.

This place hath more diseases predominant in it than the Pest-house in a Plague time; and stinks worse than any Lord Mayors Dog-house.

It is a Common-wealth, although little wealth common there; it is a desert, where desert lies hook-n-kite.

The Place is as intricate as *Rosamond's* Labyrinth, and is so full of Meanders and Crooked windings, that it is impossible to finde the way out, except he be directed by a Silver Clew; and can never overcome the Minotaur, without a Golden-ball to work his own safety. Thus much in short: the next day, paying our Fees, and receiving some checks, with good admonitions from the Justice, we were discharged. This misfortune made

us not a jot more cautious, but as soon as we were in liberty, we went upon the sent to mother Cr. formerly famous for the good Citizens wives that frequented her house; who still rides Admiral of all the rest of her function about the Town. I hope the next time I go to visit her, she will not get me clapt for the pains I take in praising her. The truth of it is, of all the Bawds I know, she merits most, having an house fit for the commodation of the best. As for her walking ureshirts they are composed of the finest merral, alwayes neatly kept; which, because they are not used upon all high occasions, they appear the more delectable to the eye. As soon as we had entred the door, I could hear a ruffling of Silks in sundry places; I conceive it was their policy, by seeming modesty to set a sharper edge on our appetites. We were conducted into a large handsome Room; bottles of Wine were brought up, both Spanish and French, with salt meats to refresh the Pallate, though we gave no order for them; but it seems it was the Custome of the house, chargeable one: but without a Peice spending you shall know little of their practises. At length, came the old Matron; she seats her self by me, and began to be impudently acquainted, chucking me under the chin, calling me her *Son Snack-face*.

Having well warmed our selves with wine: the good Gentlewoman perceiving that our blood began to heat, Well, said she, I guess at the intent of your coming hither, neither shall you go away unsatisfied. Nature will have its course; and if in youth it be stopp'd it will but Terrent like, flow with the greater impetuosity. Come, I see by your countenances that ye were born Sons of mirth and pleasure; shew then what for you came es. If you want Subjects to exercise your passion, we'll have more Wine, and when you are inflamed,

all have a Cooler. With that she leaves us, but another of the same Sex, though three degrees different age, supplied her place. At first view I seemed very well pleased: handsome she was, and very proportionable; but withall so impudent, that I was antidoted against lechery. *Ista femina quæ limites verecundiae mel exsuperat, oportet illam esse graviter impudentiam.* Once a woman pass the bounds of Shame-fastness, she will seldom stop till she hath arrived to the height of impudence. I must needs deal ingeniously, at the spinning the Needle of my Microcosm was toucht by Loves Loadstone: but upon further acquaintance, if I had have had a hundred pounds, I could not have parted with her.

Though she had baited her desires with a million of virate countenances and enticements, yet I lookt on her rather a Companion for an Hospital, and more in need of a Chyrurgions acquaintance to mine. My Friend had nibbled at the bait; but when heard them capitulating about the price, I thought I wanted a Fee for the Doctor.

Well, had she not over-traded, she had not broke down: for her trade is opposite to all others; for she set up without credit, and her too much custome sold her; and so let her go, without either shame, or of repentance.

We desired to see another, 'Tis variety that chiefly takes delight in: One constant sort of love, without participating of any other, though sweet, will cause the stomach to long for the new pots: Neither can the crime be greater in enjoyment of divers persons then one alone, divided Matrimony make not the act Legitimate. I do not approve of these consequent lines teach-

ing to this purpose ; yet give me leave to insert them, that you may understand how viciously minded some are in this frothy age.

*Born under some ill Planet, or accurst,  
Is he that loves one single Whore ;  
Who with one draught can alwayes quench his thirst,  
Ty'd to one Mistress and no more.*

This nauseating thing being removed, up came one of *Venus* her cheit darlings ; excellent flesh ! and she herself the Cook that dress'd it, spending most of her day-time about it, that she might with the better appetite be tasted at night. Finding no exceptions in this, I was so impatient till I had consummated my desires, withdrawing into another room, to heighten my thoughts, she declared to me her Birth and Education, that as the one was well extracted, the other had occasioned much cost and expence. That for her part, she associated with none but persons of quality, whose long patience and entreatments first procured a familiarity, and in fine, freedom in the exercise of Love affairs, and so would have (seemingly) put me off upon the score, that it was not usual for her to admit of any of her embraces, but such whose long acquaintance had gained her affection. I offered her a Crown, which she refused with indignation ; telling me, that she was not yet reduc'd to so low a condition, as to become so poor a Mercenary Prostitute. At last, with much persuasion, I fastned on her an half peice ; and so striving with her, (she only seeming averse) I accomplisht my end. And presently in came a fellow, whose very face would have enlightned the room, though in the darkest night ; for indeed it appeared to me a blazing Star, and his Nose (for miraculously he had preserv'd it,) was the



crusby Tayl. Laying his hand upon his sword, he lookt fiercer than a Spanish Don insulting over an Indian Slave. The bulk of his body began to heave like an Earth-quake, whilst his mouth, Aetna-like, belch'd out all manner of Sulphurous Oaths, which roared so loud, as if his belly had contained a barrel of Gunpowder, and the Linstock of his Nose had fired it. His courteous Salutation to me, was, *How dar'st thou Son of a whore, presume in this nature to dishonour me, in the abusing of my wife, without the expectation of an immediate annihilation or dissipation into Atomes? but have something here shall tame thy insolence; and now I am resolv'd to set thy blood abroad.* With that he seem'd to make a pass at me: now I, imagining that he really intended to do what he pretended, for the safeguard of my life, I took up a Joynt-stool, and received his point in the seat; and following it home, tumbled head down the stairs; and not being able to recover myself, fell with him. My Comrade came running down at the noise to assist me; but he seeing me rather make use of my heels then hands, followed my example, and built a Sconce, leaving the old Bawd to condole her great loss; for the Reckoning was very considerable.

Now because I have often met with these Hellers, or Trapping Villains, I think it will not be unsuitable to this present discourse, to insert their Character.



THE  
CHARACTER OF AN  
HECTOR or TRAPAN.

A Bawdy-house is his Cloyster, where he constantly says his Mattins. He is an Whores protector, pretending himself more valiant then any of the *Ancient Heroes*, thereby thinking to take off the suspicion of a Coward from himself: for the opinion of Valour, is a good protection to those that dare not use it. His frequent drawing his Sword upon any slight occasion, makes the ignorant suppose him valiant, whereas he durst not do it, but when he is confident danger will ensue thereon. He never strikes any, but such he is sure will not return his blows. In Company he is wonderful exceptionous and cholerick, thinking in the fray some booty may be obtained: but his wrath never swells higher then when men are loth to give him any occasion: but the only way to pacifie him, is to beat him soundly. The hotter you grow, the milder he is, protesting he alwayes honoured you. The more you abuse him, the more he seems to love you: if he chance to be quarrellsome, you may threaten him into a quiet temper. Every man is his Master that dares beat him; and every one dares that knows him; and he that dares do this is the only man that can do much with him. Yet if he knows a coward, he will purposely fall out with him, to get curtesies from him, and so be bribed into reconciliation. Yet I cannot say but that he may fight.

(if with great advantage) being so accustomed to the sight of drawn Swords, which probably may infuse something of a conceit into him; which he so magnifies by his own good opinion, that he would have people believe that the Mole-hill of his Prowess is no less than a Mountain. This little he hath, he is no Niggard in displaying; resembling some Apothecaries Shops, full of Pots, though little contained in them. His Estate lies in Contrivances; and though other Landlords have but four Quarter days, he hath three hundred sixty and odd to receive the fruits of his stratagems. He is well skilled in Cards and Dice, which help him to cheat young Gulls newly come to Town; and the reason he usually gives for it, is, *A Woodcock must be pluckt ere he be drest*. If that will not do, he carries him to one of his Mistresses, and so both joyn to plume the Fowl: if there be not ready money to answer expectation, a Bond of considerable value shall serve turn, attested by two shall swear any thing for half a Crown. No man puts his brains to more use then he; for his life is a daily invention, and each meal a meer stratagem. He hath an excellent memory for his acquaintance; if there ever past but an *How do you?* between him and another, it shall serve seven years hence for an embrace, and that for money. Out of his abundance of joy to see you, he offers a Pottle of Wine; and in requital of your kindness, can do no less then make you pay for it: whilst you are drawing money, he fumbles in his pocket, (as School-boys with their points, being about to be whipt) till the Reckoning be paid, and says, *It is not so*, yet is easily perswaded to it and then says, *Gentlemen, you force me to incivility*. When his Whores cannot supply him, he borrows of any that will lend him ought; of this man a shilling, and of another as much; which some lend him, not out of hope to be

be repayed, but that he will never trouble them again. If he finds a good look from any, he will haunt him long, till he force a good nature to the necessity of quarrel. He loves his Friend as one loath his Cloath that hath but one, and knows not how to get another: he will be sure to wear him thread-bare ere he forsake him. Men shun him at last as infection; nay, his Compassions, his Cloaths that have hung upon him long, at length fall off too. His prayer in the morning is, That his Cheats may take effect that day; it is that he may be drunk before night. He sleeps with Tobacco-pipe in his mouth, and he dreams of nothing but Villany. If any mischief escapes him, it was by his fault, for he lay as fair for it as he could. He dares not enter into a serious thought, lest he hang himself; but if such melancholly seize him, the drink is his refuge, and Drunkenness cures him. Lastly, he commonly dies like a Malefactor on the Gallows, or like *Heracles* with fire in his bones. When hanged, it begged for an Anatomy, it would serve to convert Tobacco-smokers from delighting in the excess thereof: for they will find the funnel of his body, I mean his throat, turned and choakt up.

Being freed from danger, we rejoiced exceedingly that we thus so narrowly escaped, resolving to house ourselves in the next Bubbling place we came to, that we might talk freely of this rencounter. A place (pointed out to us by the Devils Finger) soon presented it self to our eyes, which we with more than good speed entered, and coming into the Kitchen, I was not a little amazed at the sight of a thing sitting in a chair by the fire-side with a Pipe of Tobacco in its mouth, and a quarter of Strong-waters by its side. This Tun of flesh resembled an *Elephant* for the bigness of her waste, had there been the least appearance of a Tooth: A Nose she had

which with all wonder he is spoken that she had any) so long, as that it was a fit resemblance of the Elephants *Proboscis* or trunk. But as I said before, her teeth were fallen out; and as loving Neighbours to reconcile them, her Chin and Nose resolved to meet about it, she bids us welcome as well as she could speak, go, I think she could not; but opening her mouth, Lord, what strong imaginations my fancy suggested to me! Me thought I saw Hell gaping to devour me; and within that bottomless Concave, I could discern infinite numbers of Souls, whose damnation she was accessary to; and coming somewhat too near her, I imagined her breath was bituminous, and smelt of Brimstone. She might fitly be compared to old coal that hath been well burnt, that with the least spark will re- kindle, and fire any thing near it. But her fittest likeness is the Devil, her envy running parallel with his. All that the Devil endeavours, is to bring man-kind into the same state with himself; and a Bawds aim is to make all fair women like her: now because their youth perhaps will not admit of it so soon, she hurries them on to it by degrees, by drinking, smoaking, painting, and dayly excesses in venery. I lookt about her house very inquisitively, but I could not judge her moveables (setting aside her quick Cattle) to be worth an inventory. Her bedding I doubt me too is infectious, few coming near it, but they are presently taken with a fit of the falling sickness. This old Beldame being loth to put her throat to the trouble of calling her white Devils about her, had a whistle, on which she used several notes; which musical language her girls understood very well. We called for drink; the old Bawd replied she would send for some, though she had it not in the house: it was, to be sure of our Moneys. Herein I observed their temperance, not suffering us to have

have too much measure. Wenches we had plentifully one more especially I took notice of, to have the swarthyest skin I have seen English born, on whom an ordinary fellow was very sweet. When I saw my opportunity, I askt him, (craving his excuse) What Trade he was? Pat as I would have it, he answered me, That he was a Tanner. I concluded so, Sir, (said I) by your dressing of that Calves-skin there. This Dull-headed fool apprehended me not, but began to be angry, telling me, His Trade was a good Trade, & I need not undervalue it. I told him, I did not, since there was some analogy between my Trade and his. Why what Trade is yours? (said he) (I may ask you a question, as well as you me.) I replied, That I was a Cuckold maker. He can that be like my profession? quoth he. In this, said I, You dress the skins, and I trim the Horns. The Bawd at this fell into such an extreame fit of laughter, that she down fell her Pipe, and up came the Strong-waters that she had swallowed: but that was not all, for having lost not her retentive faculty, she let flie: surely she was overcharged, which made her recoyl, and so blew out her breech-pin. She was forced to leave us, and about an hour after returned; how sweet, I cannot tell you. We fell into discourse again: I asked her, How long she had liv'd in this house? Two years (said she) longer time then any house I have lived in this Twenty years: with that I concluded she was in fee with the Justices Clerk. My stomach being waterish, I would needs have some Eggs and Bacon: but Lord, what an Agony the hearing thereof put the Bawd in! desiring me to desist, for she should die at the sight of them. I askt her the reason: O, said she, it puts me in mind of one Shrove-Tuesday especially, on which the Apprentices pulled down my house; and sick, sick as I was, pulled away violently from a Candle I had prepared to comfort



me: But they gave me one with a Pox to them, and the Devils Dam take the rotten Eggs in it, with which I thought they would have pelsed out my brains, after they had dragged me sufficiently, and worried me ( as a Mastiff would a Cat ) till they were weary of the sport: fearing I should catch cold, they out of pity cover'd me warm in a Bogg-house. But the worst was, after this kind usage, I was to go through a long street before I could come to an acquaintance of mine wherein I could safely secure myself from the out-rage of these Hell-hounds. All along as I went, a thousand Dogs barked at me, the street was filled with people looking and laughing at my sad disaster, but none daring to come near me. They say I left so strong a scent behind me, that several of the Inhabitants left their dwellings upon it, and that the strong savour remained in that place above six days. I seemed to pity her much, promising to visit her often; and so we left her.

---

## CHAP. IX.

*What a Trick he served his Comrade ; how himselfe  
 Trapan'd ; his own Cloaths taken from him ; the  
 out of pretended pity, invested him with an old petticoat  
 and waistcoat ; his admittance into a Boarding-School ;  
 his getting many of the Gentlewomen with Child ;  
 discovery, and his flight.*

**T**HUS from one Bawdy-house to another, was  
 daily Travel, still finding out some variety  
 might please us. About the twilight, coming a  
 by a well built house, I saw a Gentlewoman richly  
 rired standing at the door, who, as I, passed by, ve  
 civilly saluted me, and so withdrew her self. I follow  
 ed her in, as very well understanding how to interpre  
 such actions. She brought us into a spacious Inn  
 room, and then with much civility and good carriage  
 inviting us to sit down. She called to her servant  
 bring some bottles of Wine, resolving to make us  
 dearly for her extraordinary Favours. By our hab  
 she took us for no less then persons of Quality ;  
 we had gallantly accoutred our selves ; and I thoug  
 that fortune now had designed me her chiefest favor  
 in throwing this unexpected blessing upon me. S  
 caused her Lute to be brought her, to which she sung  
 harmonically ; that the Musick of the Sphears are  
 more to be compared to it, then a Scotch Bagpipe to  
 Organ. This so intoxicated my Comrade, with  
 Wine together ( nor but that they had a great open

on my self) that he fell fast a sleep, (*alias* dead drunk.) Glad I was to my very heart of this accident, fearing he might be a rival in my intention: and to the intent I might remove all Remor's or impediments that might hinder my sole enjoyment of this Lady, I consulted with my self what to do with him: I was not long about it, but straight found out this cunning plot, which was to send him home to his Master. Love to a Woman is so forceable, that what will it not do? to sum up all, make a man betray his Friend. I made my apology to the Gentlewoman for his incivility and requested the favour to have her servant procure me a Porter; whilst she was gone to execute my desires, I searcht his pockets, and took away all his gold; for we had converted all our money into that metal, which we always made our *Vade mecum*. To ingratiate my self with that Gentlewoman, I acquainted her with my design, which she heartily laughed at. I farther desired her, that I might have a Card and a peice of paper: On the Card I wrote a superscription, and pinned it on his pocket, directing the thing to his Master, living in such a place: with the paper, I wrote a Letter to him to this effect.

SIR,

Lately I found your Goose upon the way,  
I took him up, as one that went astray.  
To recompence my pains, I pull'd his feathers;  
Each pretious down will warm me in all weathers,  
His flesh I love not, it belongs to you:  
The giblets though I keep; and so adieu.

I gave the Porter instructions, that he should but just shut him within the doors, and leave the Letter, and so with all speed to come away, to prevent examination.

he brought me word he had performed my order, wh<sup>o</sup> discants were made hereon, I shall leave the Reader imagine. By this time I had gained my Mistress with shower of Gold, which had so far prevailed on her that she protested she was wholly and solely at my votion. I would have had her to have gone immediately to bed; but she told me, *There would be time enough before morning to sport in; and that we should both tyred if we went to bed so soon.* Wherefore, to divert our selves, we drank and sung together in part I my self having indifferent good judgement. Having spun out the time so long till it was time to go to bed she then conducted me to her chamber where she intended we should lie. Though she made what haste she could to undress her self, yet we thought she was purposely tedious. I commended before her Vocal and Instrumental Musick; but then I esteemed no other musick sweeter then what the Tag made against her dice when she was unlacing her self. About two a clock in the morning, three fellows rushed into the room, which I awaked, but made as little noise as a *Perd*. My Mistress leaping out of the bed, they seized on her, gagged and bound her; and then opening the two lower of the window that was the entrance into the *Belcony* they came in all haste to the bed, and in a trice, rolled up the bed so close, that they had like to have stifled me in the middle on't: though they dragged me in the *Bed* from off the *Bedstead*, rudely letting me fall on the ground, yet I felt no harm; every part of me was so well guarded, that in that condition, I might have bid defiance to a Cannon-Bullet. But when I heard them talk of flinging the *Bed* over the *Belcony* to the Companions, I thought I should have dyed instantly for fear, knowing I must of necessity go with it. Whereupon I cryed out as loud as I could, and struggling,

little place open, and then I roared like *Phalaris*: his  
 They seeming to be surprized with my unex-  
 pected noise, fled, fastning a rope to the Belcony, and  
 slid down into the street. Perceiving they were all  
 gone, I groped about the room (for it was very dark)  
 speaking very lowly, where are you Madam? repeat-  
 ing it often; but much wondered I could not hear her  
 answer me. As I was feeling round the room, stretch-  
 ing forth my hands, I chanced to run one of my hands  
 into her, and one of my fingers into her mouth: I  
 thought my finger had strayed at first, mistaking the  
 place; but searching farther, and finding teeth, I knew  
 somewhere about I was, and discovered withal a stick  
 in her mouth, keeping it wide open, as Butchers do their  
 sheep with a Gambreil. But having removed this ob-  
 stacle of her speech, she begged me to untie her hands;  
 which having done, she untied her feet; and with that,  
 she would have clasped me in her Arms; but I hung an-  
 cle, being sensible of the stinking condition that the  
 rogues had put me in. She was very inquisitive after my  
 misfortune, asking me again and again, whether I had re-  
 ceived any harm from the Rogues. I told her no, nay,  
 I care not for my own sufferings, or what loss I have  
 sustained by them, said she, and so speedily went for a  
 candle. As I was thinking to Apologize for my nasti-  
 ness, up she came with a light, viewing me, and per-  
 ceiving what a condition I was in, she kept at a distance;  
 she said she, my fancy suggests to me, that you may now  
 resemble *Nebuchadnezzar* when metamorphozed into a  
 beast, and lying in his own dung; when you shall have re-  
 covered your humanity, I shall presume to approach nearer  
 to you. I made my Sirreverence to her, wishing they  
 had gagged her breech too so wide, that her guts  
 should have a passage through her posteriors. For I  
 soon perceived, notwithstanding all her specious  
 pretences,

pretences, she was the foundress of this plot. Well she caused water to be brought up, with which I cleansed my self; and because my shirt had too strong a sent of *Stercus humanum*, she lent me a Smock which presaged ere long I should wear Coats too.

Having shifted my self, I looked for my Cloaths but there was a *Non est inventus* out against them, my search could afford me not the least comfort: a Mistress seemed much disturbed at my loss; but when I told her I had lost such a considerable quantity of Gold, her sorrow seemed to be redoubled; and I was sure her inward joy was increased.

She comforted me with a great many friendly loving expressions, desiring me to be patient, and necessity forced me to it: I asked her advice what I should do in this naked condition: *There is no remedy* (she replied) *you must be content to cloath your self in Womans apparel, as for mans, I have none to furnish you withal.*

I consented to it, and presently she dressed me up in one of her Gowns, with all the appurtenances thereto belonging.

The slenderness of my body, whiteness of skin, beauty, and smoothness of face (having no hairs thereon) added a suitableness to the garb. I must ingenuously confess, when I consulted with a Looking glass I thought the transmutation of Sexes had been verified in me; but when I walked, I found something peculiar, which easily perswaded me to the contrary belief of my self.

I thought it folly to tax her for my misfortune knowing how little it would advantage me. The time was come, I was to take my leave of her: going to salute her, I committed a foul mistake, endeavouring to pull off my Hood instead of my hat, and making



leg (as the vulgar term it) instead of a Curchy ; but he advising me to rectifie that mistake for the time to come, we bid each other adieu.

In this disguise I traversed the streets, it being almost impossible for any to discover me, my voice being so effeminate, that I was confident that would never betray me. As I walkt, I consulted with Reason what was most expedient. My invention (as at all times) was now ready to assist me ; and thus it was.

Finding a Bill on a door, I knocked, desiring to see what Lodgings they had ; I was very civilly intreated to come in, and was shown several Rooms with much respect, for my female habit was very gallant, and so it had need, for it cost me dearer than so much cloath of Gold.

I pitch'd at last upon a Chamber extraordinary well furnished ; I never scrupled the price, (because they should look on me as a Person of Quality,) but agreed to my Landlords own terms.

I told him I was lately come out of the Country, and that my Trunks were not yet arriv'd, with a great many more fictions to prevent suspicion.

At first I intended to take it for no longer time than I could contrive away to dispose of my self, and procure mans Apparel ; but perceiving how agreeable my Feature, Stature and Gesture were to my Female Weeds, I resolved to try some projects on them.

There was a young Gentleman that lay in the house, and took special notice of me as soon as I entered it, and as he told me next day, was overjoyed that I had determin'd to be lodger there, this young Braggart (which had more money than wit) had prepared a  
banquet

quest for me, and requested the favour of me, that it and himself might be received into my chamber: I allowed it. I could not do it in point of honour, and therefore desired to be excused; but he press'd me so far (getting so his Landlady to intercede for him, that at last (though with much seeming unwillingness) I condescended thereunto. Very merry they were, but I thought it prudence to be reserv'd. My Amorist so gaz'd on me, that I thought he would have devoured me with his eyes, kissing me sometimes, which had made me like to disgorge my stomach in his face. For in my opinion, it is very unnatural, nay loathsome, for one man to kiss another, though of late too too customary I know it is; yet I look on such as use it, inclining to *Sodomy*, and have had the unhappiness to be acquainted with several, who using that unnatural action, found it only the *Preludium* to a more beastly intention. In three dayes time we grew so intimately acquainted that at last he became impudent. One time as I pass'd by him, he catch'd at me, endeavouring to intrude his hand where he had no interest, but he did it so rudely, that I verily thought he had spoiled me; I believe he imagined that he had caught me by the busk, which some Ladies wear very long to hide their rising bellies. I shew'd my self much displeased at him for so doing, expressing my resentment in imbittered words for so great a crime. Next morning, he courted me to a reconciliation with a gold Watch; by which he should have been well skilled in gaining female affections; for there is nothing prevails on them more than presents, and nothing gains sooner even them a total conquest than the hopes of enjoying a fair promising Forerunner. With much importunity I accepted his peace offering conditionally, that he should never attempt the like offence. Nothing troubled me more, then how to drive

myself when my cloaths were off, I durst not lay two things together, for fear I should mistake; there were so many baubles, I wished for a Pen and Ink, to write on them what places they properly belonged to. Viewing them on the Table together, they represented to my thoughts *Babel*, or a greater confusion, and nothing but a miracle could produce order out of them. I had improv'd my self by hourly practice, when none was with me, and observation of others, that I had now the knack on't. I new modelled my steps, my former being too large by three quarters; I could advantageously cast my eye, set my face in a platform; and dissect my words; my feet were my only Traytors, and therefore I alwayes kept them close prisoners, for their greatness (like the Devils cloven-foot) proclaimed me the contrary Sex I imitated. Well, I thought it high time to be gone, not without plucking my Widow. Having a fit opportunity, there being none present but himself and I, I pretended disappointment of money, and that my Rents were not yet due, and therefore desired him to lend me 10 *l.* for eight daies; at the termination of which time, I should not fail to return it him with gratitude. He was much joy'd, that I would favour him so far, as to accept my service; and with that flew like lightning, fearing he would have fractured his leg-bone for haste to bring me the money, which I received from him thankfully. I caused a Coach to be call'd, pretending I had business in the City. My Cully would have waited on me, which I utterly refused, telling him without privacy my affairs would prove ineffectual, whereupon he desisted.

Coming in to *Burchin-lane*, I went to a Sales-man, and bought (pretendedly for my Maid) an ordinary yet handsome Peticoat and Waistcoat, furnishing my self with all the appurtenances requisite for a servant maid.

Instead of returning to my Lodging, I caused the Coachman to drive me to one of the principal Nurseries of Venus, *Whetstone's Park*. For I look'd upon it as a matter of small import, to take my leave either of my young Gallant at home, or my Landlord, since I had not left the least Mortgage behind me for sleeping.

Mother *Cunny* (to tell the truth) was the Nick-name of that corpulent Matron, that with much demonstrations of joye received me into her house; neither could she forbear expressing her great satisfaction, in that her civil and honest deportment was so generally taken notice of, as that it should be an inducement to strangers to shelter themselves under her Tutelage, preferring her as a Guardian or Tutress, before so many thrice tried, and long experienced antient Gentlewomen both in City and Suburbs. She highly applauded both the Features and Complexion of my face, not forgetting the right colour of my hair, which was flaxen: the stature of my person infinitely pleased her, which was somewhat of the tallest: in short, nothing disliked her but that she said I lookt as if I had a greater mind to beat then bus; and to fight, than delight my Amours with smiling insinuations.

I had not been long in her house, before a roving Dame entred the house, (a constant visitant) who meeting with my Guardian, was informed that there was a rich treasure discover'd in her house, and that none should attempt to spring the Mine, till he had made entrance by the first stroak, in short, he was brought to the Chamber where I was, who at first behaved himself indifferently civil, and treated me nobly: but Heavens! how great was my confusion and distraction when strength of arguments and force of hands would not repel the fury of his lust, and that nothing would serve his turn but lying with me. I defended my

manfully a long time; but seeing it was impossible to hold out any longer, and that I must be discovered, the next assault he made, forced me to cry out: this so alarmed my Gentleman (concluding this outcry proceeded not from modesty and chastity, but out of some tripping design) that he drew his sword, and made toward the Stair case, and running down with more haste than good speed, over-turned my kind Governess (that was puffing up the stairs to my relief) and so both tumbled down together: fear had so dispossessed this huffing fellow of his senses, that he mistook my old Matron for the *Bravo* he thought did usually attend me, and so without once looking behind him, made his escape into the street, leaving the piece of antiquity not so much defaced by time, as by this dismal accident: so near extinguished, that she was half undone in the vast expence of her strong-waters, to bring her tongue to one single motion.

Coming to her self you may imagine how I was treated by her; but to be brief, I told her I could not brook such a course of life, wherein all enjoyments were attended by ruine and destruction, although habited and cloathed in the seeming ornaments of real pleasure; adding moreover, that I would speedily leave her house, investing my self with a meaner garb, bestowing those I wore on her in part of satisfaction for what she suffered through my means. This proposition so well pleased her, that I had free liberty to do as I thought convenient herein.

Exchanging my fine *Madamship* for plain *Joanship*; my equipage being suitable for service, I resolved to apply my self to a Boarding-school: and the rather, having observed it to be more thronged with beauties, than any other, my address proved as succesful as I could desire, for instantly upon my Motion, I was received

received in as a menial Servant of the house. But when I came to use the tools of the Kitchen, I handled them so scurvily, it made those teehing giglets my fellow servants, even split with laughter. To add to my misfortune, those Varlets one time when we had some meat to roast, on purpose got out of the way for a while, to see how I could behave my self; and then I did spit the meat so monstruously strange, that coming into the Kitchen, they could not tell at first sight what those joyous were called at fire. My actions had proclaimed my ignorance in all Domestick affairs, so that my Mistress could not but take much notice of me; the result was, that I was altogether unfit for her service, and that she could do no less than discharge me.

Fearing that my design was now frustrated, and my fair hopes of delight annihilated, I could not contain my tears from bedewing my face. My blubber'd eyes wrought so powerfully on my Mistress, that I judged it now the fittest time in broken accents to mollifie her anger, and still reserve my place in her service. Whereupon I told her a great many formal and plausible lies well methodized, that I had all my life time lived in an obscure Village amongst rude and ill bred people, and therefore knew nothing; that it was my desire to learn not so much valuing wages as experieñce, and it was for that intent I had tendered my service. The good Gentle-woman being much pleased with my freedom, presently ordered the maids that without showing grinning and gigleting, they should shew me any thing I understood not.

By diligent observing, I gained shortly an indifferent knowledge: though I lay with one of my fellow servants every night, yet I judged it no prudence to discover to her my Sex (though much against the hair) till I had by external kindnesses endeared her to me.



went through my business pretty handily, giving a general satisfaction, gaining daily an interest upon the loves of the young gentlewomen.

O the fine inexpressible petulances that dayly, nay, hourly pass between me and some other of them; and so crafty I was grown, that I perfectly did counterfeit a modest maiden. Sometimes we would retire three or four of us into a private corner, yet not so obscure but that we intended to be seen by some man or other we had afore discovered; and then as if affrighted by an unexpected surprize, squeek out, and then with strange haste endeavour to hide our pretended shamefacedness. Thus concurring and suiting my self to their humours, I had all the freedom I could desire.

And now I thought it high time to handle the matter for which I came about; for indeed flesh and blood could hold out no longer. One night I perceived my fellow could not in the least close her eyes, continually sighing and tumbling to and fro, sometimes laying her leg over me, and at other times hugging me in her arms, as if I had been in a press. At first I thought this commotion or perturbation proceeded from Sympathy, as questionless in part it did; for I found experimentally by my self that my heart did beat as if it would have forced its passage through my breast.

I thought I could do no less then ask the cause why she was thus restless. At first, sighs were her only answers, till at last (I pressing her much) poor thing she melted into tears. As soon as her eyes had given over deluging, and that her heart would give her leave to speak; *Jane* (said she, for so I called my self,) if thou wilt keep my secrets, I will tell thee my whole heart. Having promised to do that, she began thus to relate her story. Our Coachman for several years hath shown

shown me more then common respect, and indeed I have concealed that affection I ever bore him, yet I could not but now and then give him slight occasions of hope as the months wherein we lived together added to our age, so did it add true life and vigour to our love, which increased so much and fast, that I could hold mine no longer, but herein consists my misery, that our affections aim at different ends; I fain would marry him; he is only for present enjoyment, and finding me obstinate, and not in the least yielding to his amorous solicitations, begins to slight me, and toys with me before my face, that I know will surrender their main efforts upon the first summons. Now dear *Joan* let me tell thee, I can hold out no longer, but am resolved to give him all the opportunity of privacy I can invent; upon the least motion offered, I will entertain it. I dissuaded her from this rash resolution with as much reason as I could utter; inculcating the danger of being gotten with child, with all its aggravations: that having obtained his ends, his love would be converted to loathing; and he having rejected her as his object none that knew her would choose her as an object that may make an honest wife; for who would marry a whore, but to entail the Pox on his progeny? which ever I alledged she valued not. Seeing she was full bent I thought this critical hour to discover my self to her. Come, come (said I) I will quickly put you out of conceit with *John*, and cure this love that so much troubles you; and so I did, after which I enjoyned her silence which I thought she would have done, for her own interest sake; which she did for a while. I came at length to be very much beloved in general. It was the custom almost every night for the young Gentle-women to run skittishly up and down into one another's

Chambers; and I was so pestered with them, that they would not let me sleep. But I had an excellent Guardian in bed with me, that would not let any of them come into us, resolving to monopolize me to her self. It was good sport to observe how this Maid always followed me as my shadow, and what ever I was doing, she would have a hand in it with me. What an endless work we made in making the beds! our Mistress saw her work very much neglected, laying all the blame upon my bed-fellow; and indeed not without cause, for her mind was so employed about thinking on night, that she did little all day; which my Mistress perceiving, turned her away; which was no small joy to me, if for no other consideration then her extreme fondness, which I knew would betray us both in the end.

After the departure of my bed-fellow, the young Ladies pitying my lonesome in the night, redrest that solitude by their welcome presence. The first that came had like to have spoiled all by her squeaking, but some of her Associates running to know what was the matter, she readily told them she thought there was a Mouse in the bed: thus satisfied, they departed, and I enjoined her as I did the other, silence: but alas! all injunctions on women to keep a secret, are but as so many persuasions to divulge it. Notwithstanding I had so enjoined her secrecy, yet she made it known to some that she entertained a peculiar respect for, intending they should participate with her in what she enjoyed. This discovery did put me to an extreme hard task; I should never have undergone it, had not variety of such sweet smelling Rose-buds encouraged me.

Thus frequently each night did I repeat  
My uncontrouled passions; and for heat,

And active liveliness, I thought that none  
Could stand with me in competition.

I was then, forgetful wretch, that I a kiss  
Did oft prefer before a greater bliss.

What aid! care? my carnal joys did swell;

So slighted Heaven, and ne're feared Hell:

But let me henceforth learn to slight those toys,

And set my heart upon Celestial joys.

In the very height of these my jollities, I could not  
forbear thinking sometimes on my Eternal condition;  
but custom and opportunity had so absolutely inflamed  
me, that good thoughts which were but seldom  
wrought little good effects upon me. But if my Soul  
welfare would not deter me from these foul and wicked  
acts, yet love to my present mortal condition, com-  
pelled me for a while to desist, and by flying those em-  
braces I lately so hotly pursued, shun those complicated  
mischiefs which were appropinquant, the undeniable  
effects of my immoderate and destructive wantonness.  
My approaching danger was too too visible, for I ob-  
served that some of the Gentlewomen began to find  
strange alterations in their bodies, with frequent qualms  
coming over their stomachs, which made me sick to  
gone; and in this manner I did plot my escape. My  
Mistress having a Son much about my stature, and at  
the same time finding a fit opportunity, I got a Suit of cloaths  
his, with other perquisites, which I put on, reassuming  
my proper shape and habit, and so with flying colours  
marched off, insulting over the conquest of some  
Maiden-heads, leaving the *quondam* possessors thereof  
to deplore their ensuing misery, and condemn their  
own rash folly.

CHAP. I

## CHAP. X.

What a Trick he served a young man of his Acquaintance, whom he met withal accidentally; how he was pinched with hunger, and what wayes he invented to kill it.

I Made all the speed I could to London, knowing the largeness of that vast City would afford convenience for my concealment. But then my Cloaths much troubled me, knowing nothing would betray me sooner than they. Whilst I was studying all imaginable wayes for my preservation, such an opportunity presented it self, that therein it was plainly seen the Fates had decreed of old to favour my enterprizes. As I was walking the streets, and ruminating what was best to be done, I met with a young man of my acquaintance, who seeing me, ran and caught me in his arms, and with very much joy we congratulated each other, and so as it is usual when friends meet, we must drink together. Over our cups, I began to inquire after his condition; he shook his head, and so related to me a story, which in effect was to this purpose in his own words.

Dearest Friend, since last I saw you, never was young Man so unfortunate as my self, the cause thereof I can impute to nothing more than self-conceit, and over-much credulity;

credulity ; which by the sequel you will plainly understand. For perceiving that my Mistress shewed more then a common respect, I concluded that she had entertained some private favour for me within her breast, so that I began to be puffed up with conceit ; neglecting my duty, and now despising the Chamber-maid, who was before the only Saint I made nightly my oracions to ; with I carried my self so imperiously, that my Master was not very well assured whether he durst command or no. My Mistress would sometimes heartily laugh, to know how ridiculous I carried my self ; which I looked upon as a singular favour, mistaking her smiles for tokens of love, when they were no other than the apparant symptoms of her derision. Observing how affable and pleasing she was, I never considered the generallity of it, so that my self flattering noddle supposed this carriage particular to me, and thereupon interpreted this her complacencie into affection ; and by reason she was frequently merry and jocular, I concluded her salacious or Lecherous. Thus led into loves labyrinth ; my Masters affairs was less regarded than my Mistres supposed affection, in fine I judged it absolutely necessary to make her acquainted with my amorous passion, and no expedient better than by letter. My Mistress ( as it is customary with Citizens Wives to light the Candle of their Husbands Estates at both ends ) had her Country house, to which I was sent by my Master, with some bottles of wine, preparatory to a feast intended for the accommodation of some special friends : arriving, I found my Mistress had sent her Maid to London about some business, at which I blessed my propitious stars, to direct me thither in such a fortunate and most desired hour.

After I had delivered my message, I began to talk more familiar with my Mistress : she with a smiling countenance



asked me, What I meant? not in the least check-  
 ing my presumption, which made me more arrogant and  
 telling her, I was her eternally devoted Servant; and  
 answering me, I was bound to be her Servant for a  
 time, and that I must, when commanded, obey her  
 pleasure, to which last word, I added to my thoughts the  
 epithet Venerable, supposing she meant not to have left it  
 out; with that I replied, Mistress, I should not deem  
 myself worthy to be your Servant, if my resolution  
 was not engaged me to be so perpetually; as for my  
 affection, it shall daily anticipate your desires; you  
 shall not need to lay your commands on me, since my  
 thoughts shall be solely employed in contriving ways  
 how we may enjoy each other, to the mutual satisfaction  
 of us both. At which words, she fell into an excess of  
 laughter, (which I judged the effects of joy) and then  
 asked me, Whether I was Mad? I answered, No, unless  
 so much love had made me so; Dearest Mistress, read  
 this paper, and I hope that will better inform you:  
 Here he stop'd, pulling out of his pocket a copy there-  
 of, which was to my best remembrance to this pur-  
 pose.

Dearest Mistress,

Thus revolving in my thoughts the condition I now  
 am in, despair stands ready to seize me; but the  
 consideration and knowledge of your commiserating Na-  
 ture draws me out of its ruinating Faws. When I reflect  
 on the disparity of fortunes, and that it is your  
 indentured Vassal that thus prostrates his affection at your  
 feet, I fear one blast of your just indignation will sudden-  
 ly ship-wrack all my hopes. I confess my error is over-  
 much confidence, for which I may expect ruine, which  
 commonly attends rash attempts; especially daring to sail  
 the narrow Seas, without any other Pilot than blind

K

Love;

Love; and if I should arrive at my desired Port, I cannot deliver my goods without stealing custome. But viewing all difficulties of this Nature, consider that Love must needs be quintessential, that it is not drawn from any other interest than reciprocal enjoyment; and it must needs be exceeding strong and eminent too, that will force its way through the greatest hazards. Signifie my part by one gracious smile for what I have so boldly (yet sensibly) discovered, and I shall esteem my condition little inferior to what is Celestial; which is no happiness to me without the auspicious beams of your favour shine on me. And so subscribe my self according as your sentence shall be, either the

Most happy, or most miserable

The Verses that were annex't to the Letter, he told me he got a Rimer to compose for him, which afterwards he found stolen out of several Authors; a line out of one, and a half out of another, and so with a course thread of his brain botch'd together; which were these:

Cup'id did wound my heart; I hid the grief  
Long time but durst not seek for your relief;  
I found the smart increased on that score,  
For wounds if not well search'd, but wrangle more.  
O cure me quickly then, or else I die;  
Deny not, since there's none but you and I.

I withdrew as soon as I had delivered my Paper giving her leave to read in private, what my Love dictated. About a quarter of an hour after she came to her, assuring me in a day or two I should receive an answer to the purpose; and so absconding her pleasure, she sent me with all expedition home.

After the expiration of the three days, she came home to her City-house : at night she pretended some indisposition of body, and desired to lie by her self ; which hearing, I thought my joy would prove a Traytor to my supposed happiness ; she takes an occasion to tell me, *About twelve at night I might come to her bed chamber, the door whereof she would leave open for me on purpose.* In the mean time, she shewed my Master the Letter, acquainting him with the whole business. According to the time appointed, I entered the Chamber in my shirt ; approaching the Bed, I began to pour out my Amorous expressions ; and as I had one leg upon the bed-side, ready to enter the bed, where I thought my Mistress had attended my pleasure, I thought the Devil had waited on my Posteriors, correcting me for not making more haste. The first lash was seconded with three or four more in an instant, which made me caper up and down so nimbly about the room, that for my life I could not finde the door, at last I did ; speed was now the only Guardian I had left, and so without pausing long upon it, I made but one step of the first pair of stairs from top to bottom, which had like to have lamed me ; before I could recover my self my Master was with me again, which put fresh expedition into me ; and so starting up, I leapt down half the next pair, and tumbled down the rest. By this time he had lost the end of his whip, and fearing lest he might spoil me with the stick, desisted, bidding me go to bed, lest I should catch cold after so great a heat, and so with two or three parting blows I got into my Chamber, where I fell into a deep consultation with my self, the result of it was this ; I took my Curtains and Sheets, and tyed them together, and then fastned one end thereof to the window, and so slid : by that time I was within an half story of the ground, the knot of one of the Curtains

slipt, so that falling from that height, I thought that every bone in my body had been absolutely broken. Knowing it was no wayes safe to lye there and cry *God help me*, I raised my self as well as I could, but I had not walked far, before I found my self in no going condition, wherefore I resolved to lye under the next stall. As the Devil would have it, I found a Coblers stall newly broke open that very night: never questioning the place, I crept in, and notwithstanding my bruise by the fall, and whipping besides, I fell fast asleep, so soundly, that I awaked not, till I was forced to it with an horse pox. For the Cöbler coming to work early in the morning (according to his custome) found his door open; with that, he made an hideous noise, crying out, He was undone; for the day before he had laid out three shillings four pence, which was all his stock in Leather; all which was stoln, with many old shoes, nay his very working implements; doubtless it was done by one of his own fraternity, that had informed himself of his late great purchase. The Cöbler entring his stall, found me in own corner fast asleep. He took no other course to awake me, then dragging me by the heels out of my Den, into the street, crying out, that he had got one of the rogues, and without any more ado, fell upon me, buffeting me with his fist, and treading me underneath his feet, making himself both my Judge and Executioner, thus you may see on himself attends the others heels. I begged him in a pitiful manner to let me alone, and I would confess to him all I knew, desiring him to go with me to the next Ale-house, which accordingly we did. I vowed to him I was no wayes accessory to his wrong, informing him as much as I thought convenient of my sufferings, shewing him what woful plight I was in; relating, it was my Masters cruelty that was the cause of all this; and no other

of mine, then staying the last night out a little too long. The Cobler seemed to commiserate my misery, asking me forgiveness for what he had done and so we parted, since by the kindness of a good natured widow (where I lie) I have recovered my hurts and strength, and now am over-joyed we should so happily meet.

After this we drank very smartly, but I forgot not all this while my design on him. After that I had pitied him, and lamented his sad misfortune; I thought it high time to put my plot in execution: in order thereto, I demanded what difference he would take between my Hat and his, his Cloak and mine; there being small matter of advantage in the exchange, we agreed to go to handicap. In fine, there was not any thing about us of wearing cloaths but we enterchanged: I scarce had I uncased my self, and put on my friends cloaths, but in came one that had dogged me, attended by the Constable, with a Warrant to seize me, who they knew by no other token but my Boarding-Mistress Sons garments I had stolen for my escape. They forthwith laid hold on my Companion, (finding them on him) telling him, *He should severely suffer for the wrong he did his Mistress, in the abuse of her house.* Full of horror and amazement, he beseeched them not to carry him before his Mistress, knowing how much he had offended her, she would have no mercy on him; this confirmed their belief, that they had found out the Offendor. The more he entreated, the more deaf and inexorable were they: and whilst they were busied about their mistaken criminal-prisoner, I took an occasion to give them the slip, knowing that a little further discourse would rectifie their error. What they did with him I know no, neither durst I be inquisitive, and leaving him to the mercy of such, as would shew but little to him, I shall proceed in my own story. My flock was now

very small; how to increase it, I knew not. My invention was daily on the rack, to find out expedient ways to supply my necessary expence. But my money being all spent, my belly began to grumble out insufferable complaints against me, seeming to charge me with want of ingenuity and industry, since I injur'd my liberty; for want that men cannot, which wants not that. Alas, what should I do? I used what means I could, having no better experience. There was not a Billiard-Table, Boards-end, or Nine-pin-yard, that did not daily visit, frequenting such as had the greatest resort: in a short time I learned the Art of Spunging so perfectly, that I had the title of *Spunge-master general* conferred upon me. In those places I learned to take Tobacco, which was the chiefest part of my food, living in a manner by Smoak, as the Camelion by the Air. I fed so lightly, that I durst not stir abroad in high wind; neither durst I fight, lest one single stroke should have hazarded my dissolution; continual drinking had so washed me that my body was transparent, you might have seen within me (without dissection) the motion of the heart; you could have observed but little as to my Liver, it long since had lost its use in the conveyance of the blood, for my Stomach had nothing therein contained to supply it; like an Inns a Court Kitchen out of term time. In short, I appeared like a *Skeleton*. I had several suggestions within me to procure my self again to my Master; but the shame to be in that condition deterred me; wherefore, I resolv'd to weather it out a little longer, and try whether Fortune would once more be favourable to me. My clothes were indifferent good, which could not procure me credit, if I would make an experiment. By means whereof I had gotten an handsome lodging chamber. It was a publick house of entertainment, so that here

though



I thought I should have meat, drink and lodging for  
chalk, and chalk for nothing. I called freely for what  
was in the house, which was readily brought me; but  
when the servants beheld with what celerity, (*Hocus*  
*like*) and cleanly conveyance, I had disposed of what  
was before me, they verily believed in one week I  
would cause a dearth in the house if I staid; wherefore,  
one of the servants acquainted her Mistress with what  
she had observed, alladging farther invectively against  
me, that I looked like one of those lean Beatts which  
have nothing given them to feed on, but virtuous and  
honest women; that she believed I was the *Genius* of  
some hunger starved wretch, or a shadow without a  
substance, (which was very true as to my pocket.)  
When I thought it was time to go to bed, I call'd for a  
candle, not minding whether I called for a reckoning.  
But my Landlady did; for said she, Sir, *it is our customs*  
*to reckon with our Lodgers every night what they have*  
*that day, and once a week to discharge their lodging.* In  
truth I did intend to have discharged myself of it be-  
fore the week had been out. I knew not what at pre-  
sent to answer her, but I was selome to seek in such  
cases. I desired her to be content for that night, on the,  
morrow I would have my Trunks brought to her house  
making it my *Quarters* for some time; and that she  
should finde me a boon Companion, drinking freely:  
I believe so, she said, *you will be here for some time, or*  
*maybe you will make this your Refuge or Sanctuary for*  
*one night, and then you say you will drink freely too, give*  
*me leave to tell you, you meant at free cost.* Sir give me  
my reckoning now, or you shall have no lodging here this  
night. Do you suspect me Landlady, said I? respect  
you, said she, (mistaking the word) for what grounds,  
*unless I knew you better? and yet I doubt I shall know you*  
*too well.* That's a good one indeed, respect a skin full of  
K 4 boxes;

Bones ; a bag of Chessmen ; a bundle of small Faggot-sticks. Why, thou Haberdasher of small wares, dost thou think I will respect thee otherways than for thy money? unless I should be so mad as to fall in love with Famine. Come, give me my reckoning first, and I shall talk with you in another dialect ; if not, I shall set my Currs at thee (the Tapster and Hostler) that shall worry thy giddy Cat-ship. Heareing her say so, and thinking the passage had been clear, I betook my self to flight ; but running thorow the entry, I ran my belly directly against the Tapsters leg, that lay over the bench on which he slept. I ran so fiercely, that I shoved his head so violently against the board rais'd against the end of the bench, that I made his neck double ; the knock likewise had like to have turned that little brains he had within his head. As for my own part, I thought that his foot had run quite into my belly, and that pulling it out he had left his shooe behind. Before I could rise, I had three or four upon me, which I thought would have limbed me, as boys falling out do their cocks one Shrove-tuesday. At that time I would have spared them on limb, provided that would have contented them. But there was no mercy to be had at their hands, especially the shrill note of their Mistresses perpetually moving Tongue, sounding a charge in their ears. Being tyred with me, they would have stript me (I think stark naked) for my reckoning, but that one said. *Let his Cloak suffice* ; in which another pulled so furiously at it, that miraculously, without renting that thin transparent garment, he got it all but the cape. In this condition I was brought before my new Land-lady ; I asked her what was to pay ? *Sirrah* (said she) *more then thou hast in thy Pocket* ; (two shillings six pence) As well as I could speak, I demanded how it came to be so much. Why,

(said

(said she) there is for Beef 1 s. for Bread 4 d. six pipes of Tobacco. and three Pots of Ale; all this thou hadst in less than half an hour. I would not contradict her, though I knew it was near an hour; I desired her to keep my Cloak for the reckoning, but durst not threaten her for her abuse. Being about Hay making time, I walked out into the fields, resolving to spend that night in contemplation. I had now time to consider the damage I sustained in this skirmish: they had carryed away all my ribbons with their fingers, otherwise my cloaths received the least harm. My Nose resembled a black pudding before it is boyled, and my eyes were fled into my head for fear of such melancholly meat. My cheeks were so puffed up with swelling pride, that they were resolved to close up the portals of my Opticks, that they might not be eye-witnesses of the height of their ambition. My ears were so mauled with their fleshly hammers, that I heard a peal within my head for joy, I suppose that my eyes had taken up their residence with my brains. At last I felt something about my shoulders; at first I thought it had been the weight of the blow; but feeling found it a part of my friend that still hung about my neck, and would not leave me; which put in minde of that faithful Cloak that would never leave its master, although his master had attempted all wayes imaginable to leave it. I must needs say, I loved my cloak so well, as that it grieved me much to be compelled to part with it. It had been a servant to servants, ever since the setting up of the first Billiard-table, whence it deriv'd its Pedegree, being deprived of its employment, and dispossess'd of its ancient habitation, its heart strings were ready to break, & not being able to take a nap for grief, turn'd changeling. The young man I had it of, told me, that from the fifteenth successively, it was descended to him; but they were unworthy

unworthy to him, that having had his best days, would turn him off in his extream old age. I have him so fresh in my memory, that I cannot but condole his loss.

Cloak if I may call thee, though thou art  
Thus ravish'd from me, don't abruptly part.  
Thou didst not take distaste, and so art gone,  
Cause once : call'd thee a meer hanger on.  
'Twas but in jest ; for had I now my will,  
I'd have thee for to hang about me still.  
Now may tax thee justly for I see  
That now th'art nothing else but levitie ;  
Nay when I had thee, scarcely did I know  
Sometimes whether I had thee on or no.  
Thou wert so thin, and light that some have thought  
Thee made of that same web Arachne wrought,  
And say th'art useles now, unless men put  
Thee like a Cobweb to a finger cut.  
I love thee still for better and for worse ;  
He that divorc'd us, let him have my curse.  
Sure 'twas a red-nos'd fellow, for I know,  
He coming near, it was but touch and go.  
But let him keep thee, for thou'lt useles be  
To him ; thick cloaks suit best with knavery.

Day appearing, I got me a stick out of a hedge, and so walked in *Querpo* into the City. I walked up and down, but met with none of my Acquaintance whom I might fasten on as a *Bur*. Noon approaching my belly began to chime, I thought all the meat in *Eng* cheap would not lay that spirit hunger had raised within me. Coming by a Bakers-shop, I pretended to be ignorant of the City, and I was asking him the way to such a place, not caring what, I happily secured a penny

lost, which I carried off undiscovered ; I thought it not good to cumber my pocket wth it, wherefore at two bits I gave it my belly to carry. Surely at that time I had an *Ostriches* stomach ; every thing I put into my mouth, passed through me like quick-silver. Going a little farther, I came to an ordinary, where I saw two sitting in a lower room expecting their meat : I sat me down in the next box to them. Immediately there was brought to them powdered beef and turnips ; the young man that served them, came to me, demanding what I would have, I bid him let me alone, and not speak to loud, for those two which were next me, were my very good friends, and I would startle them by and by with my unexpected appearance ; at which he left me. Finding my opportunity, I slide my hands through a hole in the form of a heart, which was in the partition that divided us, and laying hold on the Turnips, I spake aloud you hogs, are ye at the roots ? I will make one among you instantly, and so brought out my handful ; having devoured them in a trice, I presented my self to their view, and sat down with them. *Gentlemen*, said I, *excuse my frolick, I am in a merry humour to day.* They concluded what I said to be a truth, and bad me welcome. *Nay*, said I, *meat will come instantly as a supply* ; and so it had need, for we made a clear board immediately. Seeing this, they called the boy taxing him for stoth that he did not bring my meat. *Sir*, said he, *the Gentleman, did not order me to bring any* ; at which they frowned, and began to charge me with incivility. *What are ye angry. said I ?* to which they replied *affirmatively* : if so, I answered, (laying my hand upon a full pot of Ale) *I value your anger no more than the drinking this Pot, which I swallowed at two gulps, and so bid them farewell* ; leaving them to call for another Ordinary.

## CHAP. XI.

*How he had like to have been transported, being taken by a Kidnapper, vulgarly called a Spirit. And how under the pretence of begging, he stole a Cloak, and with that went to a Gaming Ordinary ; what a bad adventure he made there, and the success thereof.*

**H**AVING satisfied my stomach, I walked along with much more courage then before ; which had been to little purpose, had I not had a stick in my hand for there was hardly a dog in the street (which I went through) that gave me not his *grinning Salutation*, and would when my back was turned (knowing as I would never have suffered their humility) have kiss my very heels, had not my stick prevented their *snearing Dogs* mouths. I have wondered often why Doggs will bark so incessantly at the sight of a Tinker, Pedlar, Tom-a-Bedlam, nay, any suspicious fellow, till I found it my self by experience, that by natural instinct they know and hate the sent of a rogue, my course of life appeared so idle (by my lazy stalking and gaping this way and that, sometimes standing still and seriously viewing what deserved not a minutes observance) that the Beadle took hold on me, telling me it was great pity that such a lusty young man should want employment, and therefore would help me to some : but understanding from him that it must be in *Bridewel*, my leggs failed me, shewing thereby how unwilling they were to be accessory to the punishment which would be inflicted on my back : at length by pittiful looks, and many intreaties, I got clear of him, but fell immediately



diately foul with an evil spirit, or a seducer of persons to the *Indies*. Well may he be called a spirit, since his nature is like the Devils, to seduce any he meets withal whom he can perswade with allurements and deluding fallacies to his purpose.

After he had asked me many impertinent questions, he invited me to drink with him; ingeniously told him I had not a penny, otherwise his motion would be acceptable to me. At which he cast up his eyes to heaven, and laying his hands on his breast, alas poor young man, said he, what pitty it is such a fellow as thou art shouldst want money; which argues thou art both destitute of friends, and an imployment also. Well I'll say no more for the present, but before we part I'll study some way or other for thy advantage, which I shall do meerly out of commiseration to the miserable-ness of thy condition, as also out of respect to thy Father, whom I am confident I have heretofore known, by the resemblance thou bearest him in thy Countenance. I could but smile to my self to hear how this Rascal dissembled; not discovering my thoughts, I willingly went with him to drink, resolving to see what the event would be; after he had paused a while, well said he, I have found it.

There is a Merchant an intimate friend of mine; that wants a Store-house-keeper; Now if you can cast Accompts ever so indifferently, you shall find entertainment from him, and forty pound *per annum* for encouragement. I told him, that I joyfully accepted his kind proffer, and that I should refer my self to be disposed of as he should think fit. With that he imbraced me, saying within 2 daies I should go a-board the Ship where the Merchant was, who would go along

along with me to *Virginia* (where he pretended the Merchants Plantation lay) in the mean time, you shall go along with me to my house, where you shall be and shall receive from me what your necessities require. I had heard before, how several had been served in this kind, so that being fore-warned, I was fore armed: *premonitus, premunitus*. He carried me away presently to *Wapping*, and housed me. To the intent he might oblige me to be his, he behaved himself extraordinarily friendly; and that he might let me see that he made no distinction between me and his other friends, he brought me into a room where half a score were smoking Tobacco: the place was so narrow where they were, that they had no more space left, than was for the standing of a small table. Methought their mouths together resembled a stack of Chimnies, being in a manner totally obscured by the smoak that came from them; for there was little discernable but smoak and the glowing coals of their pipes. Certainly the smell of this room would have out-done *Assa Fœtida* or burned feathers in the cure of Ladies troubled with the fits of the Mother. As to the sight, the place resembled Hell, so did it likewise as to its scent, compounded of the perfume of stinking Tobacco and Tawpawlin. So that I concluded the resemblance most proper.

*In Hell damn'd souls fire, smoak, and stink appear.  
Then this is Hell, for those four things were here.*

I was seated between two, lest I should give them the slip.

After I had been there a while, the Cloud of the smoak was somewhat dissipated, so that I could discern two more in my own condemnation: but alas poor

Sheep

Sheep, they ne're considered where they were going, it was enough for them to be freed from a seven years Apprenticeship, under the Tyranny of a rigid Master) as they judged it, coming but lately from sucking the breasts of a too indulgent Mother) and not weighing (as I know not how they should) the slavery they must undergo for five years, amongst Brutes in certain parts, little inferior to that which they suffer who are *Gally slaves*. There was little discourse amongst them, but of the pleasantness of the soyl of that Continent we were designed for, (out of a design to make us swallow their gilded Pills of Ruine, and the temperature of the Air, the plenty of Fowl and Fish of all sorts: the little labour that is performed or expected having so little trouble in it, that it rather may be accounted a pastime than any thing of punishment; and then to sweeten us on the farther, they insisted on the pliant natures of the Women there; all which they used as baits to catch us silly Gudgeons. As for my own part, I said but little but what tended to the approbation of what they said.

For all my aim (as I related before) was to understand the drift of this Rogue, and then endeavour to get what I could from him. By this time supper was talkt of by our Masters; so choice they were in their dyet, that they could not agree what to have. At last one stands up, and proclaiming silence, said, that a Dish of Bruis was the most *Princely Dish* of any. And to tell you truly, by his looks, I thought he had been begot just as his Mother had put a Sop into her mouth, of that Somach-murdering stuff, the grease running about her chops; which pleasing her fancy, struck so deep an impression in the imagination upon her conception, that the face of that thing she brought forth, lookt much like a toast soaking in a Cooks Drrippin pan.  
That

That he might partly deſire ſome way to indulge his appetite, he added farther, that it was a Diſh would not be expensive, and ſoon ready. My Landlady to back him on, ſaid, ſhe had ſome ſkimmings of the porridge which ſhe had been collecting theſe three months, ſome whereof ſhe queſtioned not but to procure, and let her alone to order iſo, that we ſhould ſay we never had a better Diſh aboard in our lives.

Another contradicting him, preferred a bowl of Peaſ-pottage before the chiefſt meat whatever, that he could never look into the porridge and ſee them boyl round, but that his heart leapt within him, and kept time with their motion. My Maſter ( that was che Senior ) ſcorned to be controuled in his fancy, and therefore poſitively determined to have ſome *Poor John*, ſwearing that the *Great Mogul* did eat nothing elſe thrice a week, and that *Atabalipa* ( that Indian King whom *Cortez* conquered ) cauſed a ſacrifice every day to be made of them to his Idol, commanding them to be laid on an *Alter* made of ſome coals of fire then the fat of ſome beaſt rubbed thereon, ( becauſe they had no Butter ) and ſo preſented to the Idol, afterwards to the King, which he did eat with inexpressible ſatisfaction.

Order was given that his delicate fare ſhould be provided. Though they did beat it moſt unmercifully, yet it would not yield, reſolving rather to be broken in pieces than to become unlike its Maſters heart, or ſhew any thing of a tender nature. There was one allotted me for my proportion, which I uſed as they had done, laying it on the coals a little while, and ſo committing it to my teeths diſpoſal, I never found till now that my teeth could be thus ſhamefully baffled. They made ſeveral assaults upon it to little purpoſe. My teeth at length ſeizing a total conqueſt, deſperately and inrag-

gedly seiz'd on the thinnest and weakest part, and holding it as fast as a Vice, at last in the conflict overpowered one small fleak, but not being able to stay the swift backward motion of my head, the hinder part thereof (the seat of memory) flew so violently against the wall that I not only instantly forgot what I was doing, where I was, but the pain then sustained by the knock, took away my senses: strong-water they poured down my throat to revive me, but there was nothing did sooner fetch me than a small fleak of the *Poor lohn*, which sticking in my Throat had well nigh choaked me, which caused a struggling, and summoned the spirits together to oppose what might be destructive to Nature.

Now did I really imagine my self at Sea, where, for want of provision, I was forced to feed on *Cordage*, or the *Ship-sides*. Had this poor creature been ground *small*. I might have made as hard a shift to have swallowed it, as those Sea-men did the *Saw-dust* of deal boards coming from *Norway*, and destitute of other food. That night I slept but little, neither could I, had I swallowed *Opium* for that purpose, for the innumerable quantity of *Bugs* (as some call them) that had invaded my body; being weary (as I suppose) of inhabiting any longer the *dry mansion* of that old rotten bedsted on which I lay.

In the morning I found the *ruines* of a Looking-glass in the window, which I took up to discover what *knots* or nodes those were I felt or 'spreading my face. The sight whereof struck into me a pannick fear, verily believing I had been infected with the spotted Fever.

I began to curse the bed and sheets, imagining the Contagion proceeded from them; to be satisfied herein, I drew aside at the beds feet the Curtain (that is to say, part of a Tilt) pinned there to keep the wind off, which otherwise would have

fanned us to death, coming in so furiously through the Port-cullise of the winddow: (for glasse there was little). At first sight I questioned whether I was not lately risen from the dead, since there was visible before my eyes, the black cloath that covered my Herse. Had not we gone to bed without a candle over night, I should sooner have chosen a bulk then this bed to lye on. It might have been a good *Quere*, whether those sheets had ever been washt since their weaving, and continually since imployed by Whores, Bawds, successively, to sweat out their contagious humours, and matter proceeding from their ulcerated Bodies.

My pretended friend perceiving my amazement, bid me be of good courage, for those marks in my face, were only occasioned by a *stinging sort of Vermine*, who seldom meddle with such as are accustomed to them, only giving their welcome to such as were *New-comers*. I took these sufferings as patiently as I could; but thinking it was an ill coming for me to either of them; and it should not be long before I would take my *farewell*. We had scarce breakfasted, before a Messenger came into the room, and with much seeming respect pretended to deliver a Message to my friend. I guessed it was to inform him how the tyde served, and so it proved. My friend told me we must be gone instantly, for the Merchant attended my coming: wherefore we presently went down to the stairs to take Boat: by the way he told me, that he would go with me in the same ship, and take as much care of me as he would of his own Son, whom I understood afterwards he had too sure, above a year-since stolen away, and sold him as a slave. One while I thought to have run for it, another time I thought to have cryed out, a *Spirit*, a *Spirit*, but that the thought of the Water-men, being his accomplices, deterred me, I was at my wits end, not knowing what



do. Coming into the boat, being now destitute of all relief, I asked him according to his former pretence, whether he resolved to go to Sea with me? yes, replied he. I question, Sir, (said I) whether you told a truth in your life, but I am resolved you shall now; and with that I flung my self with him over-board. Those which were in the boat, immediately at our rising to pull us up into the boat: but I clapping my hands unfortunately on the side of the boat on which they within leaned, overturned it upon me. The first thought this accident produced in me, was that a whale had swallowed me, and that I was in the dark concave of his belly: or that death had arrested me, and clapped me up a close prisoner for my sins, in Hell's deep and black Dungeon. But by the industry and expedition of many watermen, eye-witnesses of this passage, (which had like to have proved Tragical) the boat was recovered, and I the first person taken up and set on shore.

*• Multorum manibus grande levatur onus.*

Many hands made light work. I ne'er staid to see what was become of my good friend, (a pox take him) but with what speed I could, attended with a great number of little *hooping Owlets*, (I mean the young fry of Scullars) I secured my self from this *Anthropopola*, or man-seller: a charitable woman seeing me in this pickle, (for it was salt water, which my *sous'd guts* may testify if they please, in their grumbling manner of *speaking*) told me she would entertain me till to-morrow. This was the greatest *Gordial* could be applied to this *cross*; and without many complements, I thanked her for her great love. Now because she saw what condition I was in, she immediately put me to bed.

Parting from this good woman, I began to think that the Art of stealing might be reckoned amongst the liberal Sciences; for though it may be called an *Handycraft*, yet it cannot be looked on as a *Mechanick*. This is the *Art*, the right practice whereof is the true *Philosopher's stone*, the *Elixer of life*; with which many turn *Poyson* into *Medicine*, coarse cloath into cloath of Gold, hunger into fulness and satiety, convert rags into *Sattins*; and all this done by a quick wit, and slight of hand.

The Antiquity and Dignity of this Profession, I shall relate else. where, and shall proceed on in my Adventures.

The Evening or Twi-light being come, I chanced to look in at a door, and perceiving none at hand, I went in boldly, resolving if I met any to beg an Almes of them, having before premeditated what I had to say, viz. that I was a poor distressed young Gentleman, my Father, Mother, nay, all my Relations I knew, being dead, and not knowing what to do, was forced (under the Covert of the night) to beseech the assistance of charitable minded persons. But in the way found none that should occasion my using this form.

I found in the Parlor a good Camlet-cloak, which I made bold to put on, and so very gravely walked out of the house; but coming to the door, that hastened me out of the street. Being gotten a Bow-shot off I thought my self indifferent secure, so that I slackned my pace, but could not (if my life lay on it) forbear looking this way, that way, some times over one shoulder, sometimes over the other: thinking of what dangerous consequence this might prove, I resolved to walk more confidently, and not let my eyes discover any thing of fear, by reason of guilt. This loose garment had so of a sudden metamorphosed those thoughts I had of my self  
a little

a little before; my eye being continually on my Cloak, I could not conceit my self less then the best of the young Templers, that walk the streets to shew themselves: coming into *Bell-yard*, I observed several Gallants go into an House, and others to come out, which put me to the curiosity of enquiring, what, or whose House it was: who told me it was a gaming Ordinary. Nay, then (thought I) it as free for me to enter as others; and so went in. I looked on a while, but my fingers itched to be at it. Why, thought I, have not I adventiged a *Gaol*, a *Whipping*, or an *Hang-ing*, and shall I now fear a *Kicking*, a *Pumping*, or a *Bog-house*? These considerations made me resolutely take up a box, and I threw a Main, which was seven: a great deal of money was set me, I knew it was but to little purpose to baulk them, so that confidently I threw at all, which I nicked with eleven, and so continued holding seven hands together. Perceiving I had got a considerable quantity of money, and fearing I might loose that which I had so boldly adventured for, I thanked my propitious Stars and the Gentlemen, who had rather loose their money than suspect any that hath the Garb of one well extracted; and so bad them good night. A priviledge too many *Sharking Ubiquitarians* use without interruption, being most commonly in fee with the *Waiters* and *Box keepers*, who will be sure to speak in the behalf of those confident Cheats, if they lose, pretending great knowledg of them, that they are men of repate, civil and responsible; which frequently so-prevails upon a *Mouth*, that he hath not a word to say more. *Questionless* Ordinaries were first impartially founded, interdicting all play but which was upon the *square*; but since, by the connivance of the *Box-keepers*, when the Table grows thin, and few at it, let the *Stranger* beware: for the *Box keeper*

shall walk off, pretending some speedy dispatch of a business concerning the *House of office &c.* whilst your antagonist shall put the change upon you, or make use of his own *Jack-in-a box*, and then had you 500 l. (would you set like a *Gamester*) he will have it to a penny in a short while: with whom the *Waiter* goes snips. If at any time such they know want an *High-flyer, &c.* they know how and when to supply him.

Full fraught with this goop fortune, and so laden I was ready to sink, I resolv'd to moor my Vessel in the next Harbour. The Landlord whence I came, was very loth to entertain me, his lodger having served him a scurvy trick the night before, conveying out of the window, the furniture of a room that cost him 40 l. besides a great Silver Tankerd, which the Gentleman would have filled with Stale Beer and Sugar, to stand by his bed side all night, pretending it was his custom. But I desired him to lay up a parcel of money for me till the next morning, quite put out the eye of his jealousy. I shewed my self that night very exceeding noble, concealing my success at play, that he might conclude the greatness of my expence proceeded from the nobleness of my nature, having a good estate to back it. I was conducted to bed with many Ceremonies and abundance of respect. Sleep I could not, for thinking how to dispose of my self.

I had experimented the various exigences and extremities an unsettled condition is accompanied withall; and knowing how securely I could purloin from my Master, if I would moderate my theft, I concluded to supplicate my Master by a Letter for my reception into his service, not forgetting my *Mistresses quondam* kindnesses. If my Master should refuse to re-entertain me, I had by me what might supply my necessities, till I had re-considered how to improve my stock, or bestow my

my self, Not to delay time, the next day I wrote him this Letter.

SIR,

**H**AVING seriously considered the greasiness of my folly in running from so good a Master, (whom I may more rightly intitle Father) with tears I beg mercy from Heaven, and forgiveness from you. Mitigate my offence by revolving in your mind the fewness of my years, which makes me (as it doth most others) prone to ramb-ling fancies; look then favourably on my long absence from you, as a meer exiliency, a youthful elapse, which maturity of age may rectifie. If you can forgive my follies, I will study to forget them, and daily endeavour the propagation of my fidelity in the remainder of my time. By the bearer hereof you may signifie your pleasure.

Sir I am

Your cordial penitent  
Servant, &c.

With much joy my Master read this Letter, and harkning the Bearer away to bring me to him. Having converted my Silver into Gold, sowing it in my Gellar and Wastband, and putting my self into a Garb convenient for his sight, I went to him.

## CHAP. XII.

*His Master sheweth him more kindness than formerly; the ill requital he made him, by Cuckodling him; an accident that fell out thereupon, which produced two remarkable stories, deduced from the strength of Imagination.*

**M**Y Master upon reception, told me he had freely forgiven me, and if that I would henceforward endeavour the prosecution of a more regular course of life, he would forget too my past follies. I promised him more then the strictest Zealot ever yet did, and begged him pardon afore hand, if he found a defect in performance.

As my expressions gave my Master much content, so my return (I perceived by my Mistresses eyes) gave her the greatest satisfaction. My Master began to doat on me again, seeing I daily trebled my diligence, and so active I was in every thing that concerned his affairs that it was hard for any to anticipate me in my intention.

This gained so much upon his facile good Nature, that I had liberty to wear my Hat, and sit at Table with him, neither would he command me any thing servile, I had (as formerly) the same solicitations from my *Brother snippers*; but fearing least one time or another I might be snapt by the timorous nature of some, who, if once taxt, will confess, not only as to themselves, but likewise detect the whole knot of a *Brother hood*; I resolved to have no more to do with them, but would snip securely by my self, knowing, that in any secret design, if many are concerned, their business



...the policy (though  
...of modern Peddars,  
...instructed them to rob singly, by  
...their booty came to them insire, without  
...or if apprehended (as it was very rare)  
...they knew how to make a better plea for themselves in  
...a Court of Judicature. I now kept close to my busi-  
...ness, not harbouring the least temptation to any ex-  
...travagancy, and had sequestred my self from what  
...might render me publickly notorious, and only studied  
...by what means I might raise my fortune, intending to  
...build my future estate upon the ruines of other men:  
...having nothing of mine own but my late purchase at  
...play, my only way was to make the world believe I  
...was really reformed, and so create to my self a credit,  
...whereas I was only a *Devil* converted to an *Angel* of  
...light; or a *Wolf* in *sheeps cloaths*. Now did I begin to  
...cant religiously, and not omit one Sabbath wherein I  
...did not take Sermon notes, judging this religious cloak  
...to be the best expedient, to screw my self farther into  
...my Mistresses favour, who doted on *Morning Exer-*  
...*cises*, and monthly *Fasts*. If my Master had forgot to  
...do the duty of the day, I would with much respect put  
...him in minde of the neglect, desiring that I might re-  
...peat what had been delivered. As they looked upon  
...my conversion more miraculous then that of *St. Paul*,  
...so they gave me the greatest encouragement, least like  
...weak *Women*, I might prove a back-slider. There were  
...few private meetings my Mistress heard of, but by  
...the leave of my Master, I must conduct her to them,  
...which were as many portents of our private meetings  
...afterwards, where *Venus* should appoint.

I am sorry that I am so uncharitable as to say  
...that the zeal of her spirit was not so hot as that  
...of

of her flesh : every day I had some remark of her love, which I receeived with much submissive respects, pretending I understood not her meaning, which added but fewel to the blazing flame of love within her. I could not be ignorant, that since she began to court me, she would prosecute it to the end. Her court-ship methought was very preposterous ; she might have first received the charge from me, and by that means she would have found me prepared, whereas otherwise she might have been deceived in her expectation.

My Mistress gave me so many opportunities, and signified her desires by so many tokens and dumb expressions, that I began to condemn my fears, which rendered me unworthy of her favours. The besieger deserves not the honour of possessing that City, whose Gates are freely opened to him, yet dares not enter. Whilst I was thus ruminating, my Mistress came to the Counting house where I was writing ; and leaning upon my shoulder, asked me what I was doing : I told her nothing, but writing. *Nothing*, I believe said she, nor never will do *any thing*, but draw up blanks : and so abruptly left me. She knew the quickness of my apprehension, and so left the interpretation hereof to my own construction.

Not long after, (thinking her words had left a deep impression, as they did) and withal concluding I would give her the sence of them, when I had an opportunity, She informs my Master that she had a great desire to visit a Gentlewoman she had not seen a long time, and requested that her man *Thomas* (for that was my name) might wait on her : to which he assented. Though I led her, yet I wondred where she led me, through one street into another till we arrived at the water-side. She bid me call for a pair of Oars, which I accordingly did. The Water-men were very inquisitive according

ing to their Obedience, to know whether we intended. Well, well, said she, put off, and then it will be time enough for you to understand. Said she, row us up to Fox-hall. I for my part was somewhat amazed, yet I partly guessed what she droved at. I kept at a distance, shewing her the respect of of a servant; which she taking notice of, laughed, saying, Come Cuz, why dost not sit neerer? to which I replied as familiarly (for by this time I had much improved the stock of my confidence) I were best to sit a little neerer you, since I shall be the best expedient to ballance the boat even, or trim it, for you are but *light on your side*. This expression I doubt nettled her, for presently thereupon she shot a piercing dart from her eye (which I fancied to have penetrated my very soul) How now Cuz, said she, I thought you had a better opinion of me; I understand the Riddle, your expression may be very *dark* to some, however I have too much *light* in it, I would have made an apology for my self, but that she hindred me by whispering me in the ear, to this effect, that if she was *light*, there was no other cause but my self, and that if she abused her love any longer, she would sit the heavier on my skirts. Landing, we went straight to the *Spring-garden*; by the way she told me, I must lay aside all formallity, and for the better carrying on the design we went upon, she would have me as afore assume the title of Cuz. We were conducted into an obscure bow-er, I suppose one of *Loves Chappels of ease*, where, without a *Clew*, it would be hard for any to finde us. There was not any thing wanting that might delight the appetite, which with much freedome we enjoyed together.

Now, said my Mistress, I shall take off the veil of my modesty, and discover to thee the very naked secrets of my heart. The first time that ever I saw thee,

thee, I had more then a common respect to thee, there was not a time since, wherein I had the sight of thee, but that it added new fuel to the flame of my affection: I used all possible means to smother or blot it in the bud, but could not: I summoned my reason to confute my passion, and notwithstanding I alledged that there was a disproportion in our age, and unsuitableness as to our condition, and lastly how great a stain it would be to my religious profession; yet Love got the victory over these, and would have been too strong for ten times as many; the rest she supplied with kisses, which were infinite.

Having gained a little breath, and she again having lent me the use and disposal of my own mouth, I returned to this her amorous Oration, something suitable to it by way of retaliation; protesting with invocations, that since she had so compleated my happiness by her love, I would perish before I would be guilty of the least abuse therein.

That had it not been for the sense of my unworthiness, and fear of hazarding her love, and so gained her displeasure, no other difficulty should have deterred me from declaring, and discovering what she had prevented me in; adding, that where the quintessence of all loves contracted into one body, it could not equallize mine. Come, said she, let us leave off talking in such idle phrases, let future constancy make apparent the reality of our affections, and let us not loose any time wherein we may mutually enjoy each other. It is but a folly for me now to mince the matter, or by my coldness endeavour to recongeal that water where the Ice is too visibly broken and thaw'd. Yet let not your prudence be questioned, or reason forfeited, in making any unhandsome advantage of this my freedom. But above all blast not my reputation by the unfavoury breath of

any ostentatious boasting of a Gentlewomans favours, nor let her love cause any slighting or disrespect in you to your Master; neither let it so puffe you up with pride, as to contemn your fellow servants. In company shew much more reverence to me than formerly. In private, when none sees us but our selves, be as familiar and free as actions can demonstrate. Be constant to me alone, for true love will not admit of plurality. Be secret and silent, and follow not the common practise of vain-glorious Fools, that in requital of those favours they have received in private of some credulous female, will make their braggs of them in publick. As if it were not enough for them to rob them of their chastities, but must likewise murder their reputations. Have a special care you slight me not, (as some squeamish or curious stomacks use feeding too long on one sort of Food, though never so delicious) for a Womans love despised will turn into extream hatred, and will be ever restless till malice and revenge have consulted with invention, how to be more than even with the slighting injurer. She propounded more Articles, which I have forgot now, but I remember I sealed them without a witness. We made an end of our business for that time, with much expedition to the intent the tediousness of our staying might not be suspected by the ignorant Cuckold at home: I have reason now for so calling him.

Coming home, I applyed my self to the business of the Shop as before, enjoyning my eyes a severe peannance, not so much as to look towards that Object they so dearly loved. According to my usual time I went to bed, but sleep I could not, for thinking on what I had done. About one a clock I was much startled, to hear something come into my Chamber; but before I could give my eyes the

the liberty for a discovery, my Mistress had gotten within the sheets. and not daring to speak, because my Master lay in the next room, most commonly by himself, and her chamber was the next to that, (and in a Trundle-bed underneath my Mistress's bed lay the Maid. Neer upon day-break my sweet Bed-fellow left me, at an unhappy time, for then was my Master awake which might have ruined us both, which had so fallen out, had he been resolute or couragious; but on the contrary, exceeding timorous, but more especially, childishly afraid of the supposed walking of Spirits: For hearing the boards crack twice or thrice with the weight of her body; besides, by the help of Star light, perceiving something to move all in white, he shrank underneath the cloaths, not daring to put out his head; now did his imagination work as *strongly* almost as his *Breech*, suggesting strange and ridiculous things to his fancy. But I shall give him leave to tell his own story. A little after it was day, being almost stifled for want of fresh Air, and choak'd with the stink that was in the Bed, he boldly and valiantly put his head out of the coverlid, and after he had thrice exorcis'd the Devil, or the supposed evil Spirit, with avoid *Satan*, repeating as often that Scriptural Sentence, *resist the Devil and he will flye from thee*: He called but as loud as he might for me to come to him. I leapt out of bed, and ran to him, asking him what was the matter: *Thomas*, said he, light a Candle quickly, I runing in haste to light the Candle, fell (by mistaking the first step) down the stairs, which made a terrible noise: my Master hearing me, cry'd out, (saying O God, what will become of me?) thinking the Devil indeed had mistook me for himself, and that he was horsing me on his back to carry me away; with that he fell to prayer so fervently loud, that up starts the Mistress, and the Maids,



Maids, running to know what was the matter: fear had so possessed him, that he could not be perswaded, but that they were some of the devillish crew.

At first they thought him to be fallen mad; but finding out the cause of this distraction, with much ado my Mistress made him sensible of his mistake. Being fully assured, that they were not (yet) damned Spirits, he relates what he had seen, in this manner: My Mistress afterwards told me, that had it not been for laughing, which so busied her, that her sense of smelling for that time had left her, she could have endured to hear him out, for that notorious stink, which came from the bed, when he stirred ever so little.

I wonder'd, said he, that contrary to my usual custom I awak'd about four a clock, whereas I used to sleep soundly, thou knowest till eight. I heark'd, at first I only perceived the boards to crack, but presently after I heard chains rattle, and the stools flung about the room, the bed, and I in it, danced up and down, as if a Scotch Bag-pipe had been plaid upon by a nothern witch, and the Devil the while had danced with me, and the Bed a Morrice, (supplying the Bellows with wind,) Sometimes they pull'd me out of Bed, and laid me on the cold floor, and then tost me in again like a Dog in a Blanquet.

Hearing no noise, I attempted to peep out; but scarcely had mine eyes recovered the top of the Bed-cloaths, when I saw standing by me, a composition of meer bones, with a shrowd thrown over his shoulders, like an Irish Brackin, or a Scotch Pladd, with a light Taper in one hand (I knew not what use he could make of it, for there were only holes in his head instead of eyes) and an Hour-glass in the other: he grin'd at me with his teeth, (for he had no lips) and shaking his chains left me, which sight so terrified me, that I had  
like

like to have shot out (like a *Pudding* in a *Bag*) all that was within me. My Mistress had like to have broken out into extreem laughter, had not the consideration of danger (that might have ensued thereon) hindered her.

After this, it was a long time before he would be persuaded to lye in that chamber again, which made me curse his strong conceit, for by this means he would lye with his wife, which interrupted our sweet venereal pastime. As for my part, I believed he would never have returned to his own chamber again, for he trembled when he past through it in the day time; and if alone, he would so thunder down the stairs (fear giving wings to his feet) as if (*Vulcan*-like) he had been sent by *Jupiter* head-long in a message.

Another accident (happning not long after) cur'd him in part of his ridiculous belief, grounded on nothing else but fancy; In the Sellar, on a certain beam that went cross, there were a great quantity of Tenet-hooks placed there, some to hang meat on, others of a smaller sort for other uses. Our Cat being somewhat ravenous, was following the scent, and had gotten up on the beam; her foremost feet slipping, she was strangely caught by the tail, and not able to recover her self: being terribly pained by the hook, made a most hideous noise which made our Dog fall a howling. This strange din first approached my Masters ears, who awaking my Mistress, asked her now whether she would believe her own ears. At first she confest to me, she knew not what to think, her conscience being yet tender (which having no long time accustomed her self to sin, was not hardened and fear'd up) put her in mind of what she had lately comitted, so that she had like to have concluded that it was *Satan* was sent to buffet her: but she having a martial spirit, and not easily daunted, she hearkned further

further, and then judg'd that Thieves had broken into the house.

My Master all this while was *breathing his last at both ends*, whil't my Mistress leap'd out of Bed, and came to my chamber door, bidding me in all haste to rise, for there were Thieves in the house. I confess I had no great mind to be kill'd, and therefore I was in no great haste to rise, sometimes buttoning my Doublet, and anon unbuttoning it again : perceiving that I delaid, she came again, taxing me with Cowardise, and meanness of Spirit, which put new life into me, making me resolve to adventure my life, rather than hazard the loss of her good opinion.

Finding my Mistress in her smock, I thought it a shame for me to have my cloaths on : and so naked as I was, we march'd on, Coming to the Stair head my fancy troubled me a little too, for the noise had so amaz'd me, that I would fain have my Mistress to go first ; she could not forbear laughing, to observe how complemental and ceremonious at that time I was. Having scatter'd my fear by resolution, how do I abuse my self, said I, and with that boldly went on.

By this time a light was was produced, and then those Bug bear thoughts which darkness possesseth the fancy withal, began to vanish. There was not a hole big enough to contain a man, but what I *prob'd*. Descending the Cellar-stairs, I there plainly Original cause of fear and distraction, hanging by the tail. I called my Mistress to the sight, and now the maids too would be Spectators, understanding the danger to be overpast.

Well, the general vote was that the Cat should be carried up stairs to our Master, and shew him the wound in his Tail, for evidence to prove his guilt in being seduced by fancy.

M

He

He hearing some come up, thought we were all destroyed, and that they were coming up to dispatch him too: Wherefore he cryed out, *Save my Life, and take all that I have.* His wife (not to encrease his perplexity) bid him quiet himself, there was no harm, nor any like to be done; and withal so convinced him of his folly, both past and present, that he had not a word to say in his own defence; he enjoyning us all silence, we were dismiss'd.

The next night, to shew how much he was altered from his former temper and beleif, he did lye in his Chamber aforesaid, supposedly haunted, and that same night with much joy, my Mistress and I renewed our pleasures.

## CHAP. XIII.

*How his Mistress supplied him with money, even to superfluity; what wayes he had to spend it. He is tempted to destruction by Correctors, ( alias ) Clippers, and Coyners ( alias ) Matter-men. He breaketh his Master ( by the help of his Mistress ) and so setteth up for himself with what money he had unlawfully gotten in his Apprentiship, and credit besides: what a trick he served his Master at last: his Master and Mistress soon after dy'd. His credit becomes suspected by his exorbitant manner of living in Drinking, Whoreing, Gameing &c. He thinks to sawder up that crack by Marriage; he is deceived both in Person and Portion.*

**I** Found my Estate to encrease abundantly, for I was half sharer my self with my Master; my Mistress she put me in for one too, which I had like-wise; so that the good man received but the fourth. I had been (since my return) very sparing in my expence, having laid up my money securely: But now finding out another rich Mine, I thought I should be too rich, unless I contrived wayes to draw out, as well as put in.

In the first place, I thought good to buy a brace of good Geldings, for by that means I could meet whom I pleased, though a dozen or sixteen miles distance, and so by the quickness of return come home undiscovered. If occasion should serve, they might very well serve for the high Pad. These I bought, and where they

I had four or five several suits, either to Ride withal, (using variety that I might pass *incognito* ) or to wear when I did intend to appear splendidly to peculiar friends; and then the Prodigal himself did not spend his money more profusely than my self.

I judge it unnecessary to relate how, and in what manner I disburs'd great sums, since there are few that are addicted to pleasure, and have money, but know how to lay it out to the satisfaction of their desires, that is to please all their senses. My Mistress seldom saw a piece of Gold in her Husbands hands, or some large and great piece of Silver, but she would be begging it of him, for no other intents but to give it me; which she took delight in, withal, knowing that frequent presents very much ingage the affection.

My Master seldom denyed her, ( for, like a Cuckold he doted on his Wife ) but if he did, she would take pet, and would not eat, have the fore head bound down with a cross-cloth, look pitifully, and the like. If he askt her what she ailed, or what she was troubled at, she would say, et nothing more than your unkindness, and then weep bitterly: for, like a right *Hypocrite*, she had tears at command. The *Dotard* would melt too, sometimes the great Calf crying and sobbing, like a child that hath lost her Bread and Butter: Then to make his attonement, he must procure her two or three pieces, if he hath them not in the house; otherwise it shall cost him as much more wealth on the Doctor, of whom she would often pretend to take Physick, but it should be only rich *Cordials*, *strengthening* *Jellies*, with such like *Provocations* to *Venerie*.

For my own part, I was not idle in the mean time, laying up like the carefull Bee for Winter. We returned great Sums of money every day, which an acquaintance



which an Acquaintance of mine knew very well; and he being dayly in the company of a fellow, who was both Coyner and Clipper, it seems a decayed Goldsmith undone by the study of Chymistry, but now lived by some particular part thereof, as the transmutation of Metal, or so forth.

This man he informs that he knew a young Casheer, that he thought he could work to their purpose, who was very well qualified for it. An appointed time for meeting was agreed upon between them, which was made known to me: I thought of no other design but to be merry. Being met, we drank stilly, but ever and anon the stranger would beseech me to favour him with my future acquaintance, that he should think himself very happy, if I would admit him into a familiarity. I could do no less than promise so much, and so laying aside all ceremonies, we entred into a very familiar discourse. But for that night there was nothing propounded, neither was it thought convenient: several times we met, (not without great expence) so that now we were grown intimately acquainted. Our discourse hapned on a time to be about Chymistry, I was forced to be mute, as not understanding any thing thereof; yet I could not but admire, to hear any new friend relate what admirable rarities he could perform in that mysterious Art, and thereupon shew'd me a peice of Gold, demanding my opinion what I thought of it? I told him I could judge no less, but that it was what it seem'd to be, he smilingly reply'd, no wonder that this should deceive you, since it will do the like to the most critical Goldsmiths about the Town: no doubt, said he, you have heard of the Philosophers stone, and what vast Estates some have mis-spent in the search whereof: how ineffectual the labour of such hath been, the miserableness of their condition makes apparent.

Others, and not a few, have pretended they have obtain'd the mastery thereof, for no other intent then to delude some wealthy credulous person, making some ridiculous experiments to confirm his belief, and at last extract him to the very lees of his Estate. I shall not deludingly pretend to any thing, but what I will perform, which your own eyes shall attest, Hereupon he shew'd me various peices, both Gold and Silver, which are the effects (said he) of my own labour or pain, imployed in an Art I have found out by the curious search and industry of my brain, with which I can convert Copper into that Metal which current Money is composed of, either of which, according to the tincture I shall give it, And to be plainer with you, out of that great love I have born ever since I first saw you, and that my actions shall make it apparent, see here this peice, according to the term of Art given, it is called a *black Dog*, with *Queen Elizabeths head* thereon, which is only Pewter double washed. This here is a *George plateroon*, being all Copper within, and only a thin Plate about it. Another called *Compositum*, which is a mixt metal, and will both touch and cut, but will not endure the fiery test. He gave me the sight likewise of Peices of *eight, half peices, and quarter peices*. Then again (said he) our own coyn we usually call *English cloatin*, the other *spanish*; the prices whereof are several, according to their goodnes and finenes: The best you may have for 15 sh. the yard, the blue shillings in the pound profit; the worster for eight pence, or more.

Now to the intent I may compleat your happiness here, if enjoyment of Wealth will do it, I would advise you to take some of every sort, and so mingle it with the rest of your good cash, proportionably to the sum. Let me add one thing more, if any large money comes

comes to your hand, lay it aside for me, which after I have corrected a little, (for broad brim'd hats are not now in fashion) I will return it, allowing you eighteen pence per pound interest.

I gave him all this while great attention, without the least interruption; but here he making a stop, I thought he expected my replication; which was to this effect, that I thank him cordially for his respects, which I believed were real, having used that freedom with me, that I did not in the least question the greatness of profit that would redound by the acceptance of his proffer, but it being a matter of the greatest consequence, and highest concern, I desired I might have some time for consideration. This answer made him look blank, fearing lest I made a demur only to betray him, so that I saw by his countenance, he wish'd he had been more sparing in his expressions. I must needs confess, I trembled all the time I was in his company, wherefore I made all the haste I could to be gone, giving him to understand, that after serious consultation with my self, I would send him an answer by my friend, and so I took my leave of him. The whole night following I spent in weighing his proposals in the balance of profit and preservation: I quickly found that life's preservation outweigh'd all other interest, and that honour, riches, and pleasure would avail little to that man that was riding Post to the Gallows. Besides, how could I expect to escape better than others, who were frequently made wretched spectacles of rash imprudence and folly, who, having forfeited the Kings high and just displeasure, did usually betray their own selves to the severity of the Law in that case, which hath as little commiseration on such as the worst of Offenders? Though I had committed several things that might come within the verge of an indictment, yet I alwayes shunned such actions as

bore the inscription in their front, *Memento mori*. To be as good as my promise, I sent my Chimist these consequent lines.

SIR,

*You seemingly do proffer fair, but know,  
Hanging attends such kindnesses you show.  
The hope of profit tempts me ; loss of life  
O're pow'r's perswasions, and so ends the strife.  
Had i two Lives, my deeds should make it know,  
How little I would care to hazard one ;  
But having solely one, I will not try  
Its loss ; as yet I have no minde to dye.  
Should we proceed then, and be taken in it ;  
Death and damnation seize us in a minute.  
Cease then, and let your fancies suite with mine,  
We'l plot no Treason, but to get good Wine :  
That being bad, let each man's face declare,  
Th' Indian Mines not so rich as ours are.  
If we want coyn, the best way, I suppose,  
Is to transmute the Metal of my Nose.*

I never receiv'd any answer to what I wrote, neither did I ever see my new friend after, which was according to my own desire, but I heard of his sad destiny, whereof I should have participated, had I lifted my self in that Mistle-simulating Regiment. Some found out operating in the obscurest thickets of woods, others were detected clipping in dark Concaves on Black heath and their ring leader discovered in his own house, in a deep Vault befitting his purpose ; who ; though he had timely notice to remove his tools, yet by his Seizers they were found hid in a Chimney-mantletree, followed to the intent, with a shutter at the end.

After

After the dismal catastrophe of these Hazardous fools, I had like to have been put to a great trouble, though not in the least guilty of the accusation: and thus it was; an indigent hanger-on, having taken notice of my being once or twice in the company of the chief of those lately executed, came to me one evening, and requested some private discourse, I consented; being together (laying aside several formalities that ush red in his discourse) he told me, that I was taken notice of a notorious disperser of counterfeit money, & that there was a warrant out to apprehend me, and that out of pure love to a man so young and fairly promising as my self, he thought himself bound in duty to preserve if he could, by giving timely notice to shun that, which, if neglected might prove destructive. I immediately saw the *Rogue* peep through the Vizard of dissimulation, and therefore instead of giving thanks I gave him a blow over both the eyes, to the intent he should not see how I would beat him, which was in such a manner, that he could not see himself for three dayes afterward. This Fellow I understood to be a Dunner for the Prisoners of their confederates abroad; and if they would not continually let down their milk, impeach them, and were often condemn'd.

But to proceed, now I had served my time, and was accordingly made free; but solicited by my Master to stay some longer time as a Journeyman, which I consented too, knowing it could not be long: for we had so purloined from him, that it was impossible for him to subsist any longer.

Now his Creditors visited him dayly, so that now his whole time was taken up in studying fair promising words to satisfy them for the present, and telling them when they should come again.

My

My Master perceiving the danger he was in, would neither stir abroad, no, not so much as come into the Shop. He now standing upon the brow of a very high hill, and being forced to descend, I resolved to save him the labour, and so threw him down headlong.

By this time I had conveyed away a sufficient quantity of his goods, intending them for my own use; and stowed them in a warehouse which I had lately taken privately for my purpose. My Master one night told me his intended design, that he was resolved to pack up all his goods, and to gather in what monyes he could, and so take his wife with him for Ireland. I thought I should have dy'd at first when I heard him talk of carrying his wife with him, and could not forbear dropping some tears; which he perceiving, he trickled down his cheeks to bear mine company. Well now, said he, I see thou lovest me too, as well as thou hast hitherto proved faithful. But the dearest friends must part (and with that he wept again like a Child) however my comfort is, I hope we shall see each other in Heaven. I thought with my self, I had rather see him in the Counters. And from that minute I contriv'd how I might effect it: For at that time I should never have been able to have brookt a separation between my Mistress and self, especially at so great a distance. She and I often consulted what to do; sometimes we were in the mind to take what money the old fool had, and so run away together, with many stratagems which we propounded; but were rejected as no wayes expedient nor convenient. At last I resolv'd on this, that she should acquaint her self of the exact time and way he intended to go, and so inform me thereof. I receiv'd information in a short time after, that before break of day, at such a time he would take Horse at *Ipsington*, and so for *Winchester*. I immediately sent away word



to one of his chiefeſt Creditors, making known to him the ſum and ſubſtance of every thing, and, that if ever he expected to receive what was due to him, he muſt at ſuch a time have Officers ready to way-lay him, in order to his arreſt, which was punctually done according to what inſtructions I ſent him in a Letter, without a name ſubſcribed thereunto. He had not been long in cuſtody, before I was ſent for, to adviſe with him what was beſt to be done in this his great perplexity. I could do no leſs then ſeemingly condole his miſfortunes, and withal ſeemed to be very active as to his aſſiſtance, running up and down to his Creditors to bring them to a compliance; but he had been better to have ſent ſome perſon elſe as ſolliciter, in his buſineſs, for by my means I made his wound incurable. Seeing there was no remedy but patiently to endure his inevitable imprisonment, he got an *Horſe*, (as ſome men term it) *alias* a *Duce facies*, and ſo remov'd himſelf to *Ludgate*, where he had not been long e're he dy'd for grief.

In the mean time my Miſtreſs had ſecured what he had, which I enjoy'd. I had now an Houſe and Shop of mine own, very well furniſht; but withal I was grown ſeaboſt and profuſively laſh, that I ſeldome was at home but at night, and then in bed with my Miſtreſs who was very importunate with me to marry her: I confeſſe I loved her intirely as my Miſtreſs, or Whore, but I hated as my Wife, knowing very well that if ſhe would be an Whore to me, an have an Husband, ſhe would be ſo to an another when I was in the formers place. She now found her ſelf with Child; whereupon (taking upon her my duty) ſhe dayly preſſ me to ſave her credit. But I delay'd, putting her off continually with ſpecious pretences, which her love and facileneſs eaſily ſwallow'd. The time of her delivery approaching, I went down into the Country with her; and be-  
cauſe

cause it was at hand, I stay'd to see the event : within short while she fell in labour ( now because we were known for no other than man and wife, ) when her throws came upon her, she would not let me stir out of the room. Her pain growing intollerable, she call'd me hastily to her, and getting my hand within her Farewell, said she, I dye for thee ; thy last unkindness in not performing thy promise, and not returning love answerable to mine, hath untimely yeilded my days with that she groaned, and then using her former expressions, cryed out, Love my memory however, since I dye for thee. She utter'd not one word afterwards being as good as her word : the good woman look'd strangely on me, every one passing their verdict, and concluding her none of my wife. The first Christian under the great persecution, suffered not in 500 years so many several wayes, as I did in five hours by the peoples tongues. I must needs say, I took it very much to heart, that report, which made *Richard* the second alive so often after he was dead, should kill me as often whilst alive ; desiring them at last to wave their Censures ( which they exprest publickly ) I entreated them with all the Rhetorick I could produce to endeavour the reviving of my Wife, which if past recovery, to use means to preserve the Child. In a short time they told me that was dead likewise. At first I shewed much grief, which was unfeigned, being not so much afflicted for the loss of her, as affected with those words she utter'd when she breathed her last. I was too conscious of my own guilt, and therefore they made the deeper impression in my very Soul.

But all these perturbation of mind I dissipated with a glass or two of Canary, which was the common Antidote I us'd against care, sorrow, and vexation, &c. I now provided things necessary for her Funeral, which

were not vulgar ; which I might the better do, having made my self her Executor before, taking all she had into my custody. In memorial of her, and her fidelity, I wrote this Epitaph on her Tomb-stone.

*Women they say will lye, but now I see  
 'Tis false, to th' last she spak the truth to me.  
 Farewel said she, I thought my grief t'have hid,  
 I dye for love of the, ---- and so she did.  
 Here with her Child, that strove in vain  
 To untomb it self, to be intomb'd again:  
 But rest my Babe, thy cares with life are gone,  
 Thou'lt rise again, though now a setting Sun.  
 Though wonders cease thy Mothers death doth prove  
 They may revive, for she did dye for love.*

Returning to my own habitation, I found that my so long absence had raised a jealousy in my Neighbours breasts, that I was run away ; which rested not there, but spread like a Canker, so that this flying report came to some of my Creditors ears, which made them both impatient and importunate with me for their moneys ; I wondred whence proceeded their unexpected haste. Some that would not be put off with promises, I was forced to pay ; from others I obtained a little longer forbearance, which gave me but liberty to prosecute my former courses. If I was at the Tavern, I was either drunk, engaged in a quarrel, and so involv'd in blood ; or else at play, if not at a Bawdy house, which places I could not refrain from frequenting, though I kept one of my own at home. For I would not entertain a Maid, but what was more than ordinarily handsome, whom I commonly vitiated either by presents, or promises if I got them with child. When I was weary of one, I paid her off, with additions

cause it was at hand, I stay'd to see the event ; within short while she fell in labour ( now because we were known for no other than man and wife, ) when her throws came upon her, she would not let me stir out of the room. Her pain growing intolerable, she call'd me hastily to her, and getting my hand within her Farewell, said she, I dye for thee ; thy last unkindness in not performing thy promise, and not returning love answerable to mine, hath untimely yeilded my daies with that she groaned, and then using her former expressions, cryed out, Love my memory however, since I dye for thee. She utter'd not one word afterwards, being as good as her word : the good woman look'd strangely on me, every one passing their verdict, and concluding her none of my wife. The first Christians under the great persecution, suffered not in 500 years so many several wayes, as I did in five hours by the peoples tongues. I must needs say, I took it very much to heart, that report, which made *Richard* the *seem* alive so often after he was dead, should kill me as often whilst alive ; desiring them at last to wave their Censures (which they exprest publickly) I entreated them with all the Rhetorick I could produce to endeavour the reviving of my Wife, which if past recovery, to use means to preserve the Child. In a short time they told me that was dead likewise. At first I shewed much grief, which was unfeigned, being not so much afflicted for the loss of her, as affected with those words she uttered when she breathed her last. I was too conscious of my own guilt, and therefore they made the deeper impression in my very Soul.

But all these perturbation of mind I dissipated with a glass or two of Canary, which was the common Antidote I us'd against care, sorrow, and vexation, &c. I now provided things necessary for her Funeral, which were

were not vulgar ; which I might the better do, having made my self her Executor before, taking all she had into my custody. In memorial of her, and her fidelity, I wrote this Epitaph on her Tomb-stone.

*Women they say will lye, but now I see  
 'Tis false, to th' last she spak the truth to me.  
 Farewel said she, I thought my grief t'have hid,  
 I dye for love of the,----- and so she did.  
 Here with her Child, that strove in vain  
 To untomb it self, to be intomb'd again:  
 But rest my Babe, thy cares with life are gone,  
 Thou'lt rise again, though now a setting Sun.  
 Though wonders cease thy Mothers death doth prove  
 They may revive, for she did dye for love.*

Returning to my own habitation, I found that my so long absence had raised a jealousy in my Neighbours breasts, that I was run away ; which rested not there, but spread like a Canker, so that this flying report came to some of my Creditors ears, which made them both impatient and importunate with me for their moneys ; I wondred whence proceeded their unexpected haste. Some that would not be put off with promises, I was forced to pay ; from others I obtained a little longer forbearance, which gave me but liberty to prosecute my former courses. If I was at the Tavern, I was either drunk, engaged in a quarrel, and so involv'd in blood ; or else at play, if not at a Bawdy house, which places I could not refrain from frequenting, though I kept one of my own at home. For I would not entertain a Maid, but what was more than ordinarily handsome, whom I commonly vitiated either by presents, or promises if I got them with child. When I was weary of one, I paid her off, with additions

tions to her wages, and entertain'd another, who would in a short time be wrought upon as well as her predecessors, being ambitious to lye with her Master, and vainly hoping that to be the first step to her preferment, thinking of nothing but presently marrying, and so be Mistress. In three years that I lived as Mr. I had nine illegitimates, which I knew, four whereof were begotten by my maids, which put me to a vast expence. Two of the Mothers would have forced me to have married them, or allowed them competent maintenance (for they were subtil cunning baggages) had I not by a while got them aboard a Vessel bound for Virginia, and never hard of them since. Besides two or three terrible claps, which cost me a considerable sum in their cure. This distemper, as it caused a *consumption* in my Pocker, so it impaired my wonted strength, and almost spoiled my natural Talent.

I now began to be sensible of my folly, and so resolv'd to take up in time, and redeem by degrees my lost credit by a temperate sober life; but that I found I had wasted my self extreemly, by which means I became less capable of reacting what I had before done, and my mind in a manner satiated, I question whether I should have had now such penitent thoughts. For a while I kept my Shop diligently and constantly, I would not drink with any but at home; my sudden alteration made people admire, and the suddenness of my reformation was the common discourse of all my Neighbours: the Parson of our parish hearing of my strange alteration, came to me, which I admired at; for before, he that had the least care or respect of his Reputation, would avoid all occasions of being seen in my company, lest they might be suspected extravagant and debilit.



*Pares cum paribus facillime congregantur.*  
Birds of a Feather will flock together.

The shortness of his hair declar'd him a member of the *Circumcision*, but his *tripple cap*, or three caps on his head, shew'd, though he hated the very name of *Rome*, or *Babylon*, yet he lov'd formerly a whore in private, though not common. His Cloak was fac'd down with seal before, and his Band appear'd but as a broad hem, to shew that a hem with two or three formal spits, or a feign'd Cough, was the usual supply of his discourse, when he had thrash'd himself in his Cloak out of breath in the Pulpit. His looks resembled the bleer-ey'd Printing at Geneva (and his face like that ragged sort of Paper on which they work off their impressions. After he had let his face into a Platform, he delivered himself. I shall not relate exactly his own coming words, or what he borrowed from Scripture, being sensible, *non est tutum ludere cum sacris*, but give you the substance, which was a reproof for my extravagancies: secondly, some general instructions, (pickt out of a common-place Book) for my future practice: and lastly, some encouragements drawn from various motives to proceed (without looking back) toward a good life: on which three points he ran divisions strangely, till Dinner-time; and then his stomach petitioned him to shut his mouth, lest it should be deprived of its appetite by receiving in too much air.

In this seeming strictness of life I lived two or three months, and now some began to have charitable thoughts of my Soul; and that I might regain my runnings out by future diligence and industry.

I had several Matches offer'd me, which I saw but lik'd them not; for I had always been a general lover, and

and could not now come to particulars. At last it was my misfortune to see one, whom I was with to; and which at first sight robbed me at once, both of my self and good company.

Formerly I was pleasing and affable, desirous and desired of good society, but never liv'd till now an *Anchorite* on earth. Neither did I ever till now turn mine eyes to one particular face, giving them free liberty to wander. But now at last I fell from my primitive liberty, losing it totally. by a dotage on a Creature, and that a Woman too: a just judgement on me, for my manifold sins to throw this thing in my way for me to stumble at.

#### CHAP. XIV.

*How he was married, and what kind of thing his wife. Some observations concerning Love and Women, selected out of the choicest Commentators on that nature, together with his own experimental reflections. He cheats his Creditors by knavish breaking, and runs away for Ireland, he is Ship wrackt on the Isle of Man. His arrival into Ireland: he changes his name, what trick he serv'd his first Landlady; all his Money being spent, and those goods and coyn likewise Shipwrackt which he expected to follow him.*

**I** Made strict enquiry after the condition of my intended Wifes Parents, and found by report they were very wealthy. In a short time we had conference together about the Portion, and my estate, and therein we were all satisfied. My Court-ship was very noble, yet not prodigal, for fear of giving offence; and in a little while we were married. by her looks I thought

her so modest, that an unchaste thought durst not enter into her head, since all immodest expressions she banished from her ears.

The first night I thought to have had the first *taste*, but my experience told me the *Tarriers* had been there before. This struck me into amazement, that there should appear such Virgin-whiteness, and the extract of innocence in her face, yet be guilty of a crime so notorious. Much perplext I was, but durst not vent my self, what was more than bare suspicion. In one half years time what I intended to conceal could be hid no longer, being brought to bed three months before her time; and yet the Bawd her Midwife would make me believe this was usual; and that Children brought forth at six months might live.

Now began our domestick Civil Wars, which was carried on with such fury between us, that there was hardly an Utensil in the Kitchen that could rest in quiet from flying about our ears continually. My wife acted the *Silent woman* to the lifewhilest in a single state; for before we were married all her answers were very short comprehended within the two Monosyllables of *I*, and *No*; and those two must be forcibly extracted from her. But now how her tongue wagg'd in a perpetual motion, and her voice so shrill and loud, that it would be heard distinctly, though a piece of Ordnance were discharged near her at the same time, or standing at the Bell-room door whilst the Bells were ringing. Frequent were her complaints to her Father and Mother, which alienated their affection from me, so that their only study was how to be rid of me. Her forgeries (to excuse her own Devilry) had so infligated them, that they sought my ruine by all wayes immaginable. Besides they laid an *Imbargo* upon the rest of my Wives portion unpaid; advising

N

advising her withal to secure what she could for her own self-preservation. She followed their instructions so exactly, that in a short time I found my self in a very declining condition, yet knew not the cause till it was too late, conveying away both my goods and money, some whereof went to supply the necessities of her Stallion.

I was all along jealous of this though I could not conclude her altogether so culpable. But my doubts and fears which of all are the sharpest passions, could not turn this distemper into a disease (although they lookt through false Opticks, making things appear like evening shadows, disproportionable to the truth, and strangely longer than the true substance) till knowledge hereof (confirmed me by the witness of my eyes) had banisht bare suspicion.

Which was thus, One night I caused my self to be brought home by a Porter as dead drunk ; my wife received me in that condition (I perceived by peeping out of my eye-lids) with much satisfaction, and was immediately carried up to bed ; with much difficulty they undrest me, pretending my self asleep all this while, and so they left me. It seems by the story that my Wife presently sent away the maid (which was her Pimp) to her friend to come at such an hour. About nine of the clock the Maid was posted to bed ; and about ten I heard one small knock at the door : he needed not to knock there any longer, for there was one below that was ready to receive him. When I judg'd they were incircled in each others arms, (which I understood by hearkning at the bottom of the stairs, and thereby knew whereabout they were) I ran in upon them with my sword (which I had prepared ready) and thinking to have run them through the body, intending to make a passage for their Souls escape, I putt  
my

my Sword through the fleshy part of both their thighs. At which they made a most hideous out-cry, so that the Maid came running down : and a Watch-man that stood just at my door hearing the noise, knockt at the door, to know what was the matter ; the Maid apprehending the danger, let him in, who by the help of his Candle, never saw so strange a sight ; for I had so pin'd them together, that they could not stir. As well as they could speak, they both begg'd their pardon for their lives only, which I granted, as looking on my revenge somewhat satisfied.

My Gentle-man I dismiss, but as for his Mistress I was forced to send for a Chyrurgeon, whose wound needed no probing, but tenting, for it was through and through. There was no concealing of what was done ; wherefore in the morning early I acquainted her Parents with what had hapned last night, insisting further, that since she had instead of putting off handsomely the chain of Matrimony, rudely broke it, it should be her own damage ; neither would I be at the cost of a visitation to repair the breach. To which I added, that had I deny'd her things requisite and necessary, or not performed duly my duty, she might have had some pretence for her slighting me, and look upon me only as a false Crow set up in a Garden, to keep others from the fruit it cannot taste it self, But since it was otherwise, and that she had nothing to object against me, but only sometimes curbing her inordinate desires ; I wish't them to save me the labour of having the Law to tear her from me, but that they would remove her elsewhere.

They reply'd but little, hastning to their daughter ; and fearing worse mischeif might ensue, they instantly conveyed her into the Country. She had not remained there long, before she was cured, and not enduring to

be confined to solitariness; repaired again to the City where now she lives as such do that keep Civet Cats; but I hear she is very reserv'd to all, but such she knows she may intrust her self with.

*There never yet was woman made,  
Nor shall, but to be curst;  
And oh! that I (fond I) should first  
Of any Lover  
This truth at my own charge to other Fools discover.*

*Ye that have promis'd to your selves  
Propriety in love;  
Know womens hearts like straws do move,  
And what we call  
Their sympathy, is but to love yet in general.*

*All mankind are alike to them;  
And though we Iron finde  
That never with the Loadstone joyn'd,  
'Tis not the Irons fault.  
It is because the Loadstone yet was never brought.*

*If where a gentle Bee hath fallen  
And laboured to his power,  
A new succeeds not to that flower,  
But passeth by  
'Tis to be thought the gallant elsewhere loads his thigh.*

*For still the flowers ready stand;  
One buzzes round about,  
One lights, one tasts gets in, gets out.  
All alwayes use them,  
Till all their sweets are gone, and all again refuse them.*



However, I must confess my own faults, as well as condemn others; which I was too inquisitive after that, which the more I knew, would the more disturb me. Curiosity in this renders a man as ridiculous as Coxcomb, as that Cuckold Sir John Suckling mentioneth, who made diligent enquiry, whether he was made so in a bed, or on a Coach: and whether his duty-officiating Cavalier pulled off his Spurs first or not, &c.

Well, it was my hard fate to marry thus like one doom'd to prison, who expecting to ly in a private room is confined to lie in the hole. Had I married the best, I believe I should have found my self in the stocks. 'Tis strang that I of all men should be deceived by this thing that was like a box bearing drugs not suitable to the inscription. Had not my passion hung in mine eyes, when I look't into her disposition and carriage, I might have easily understood that her behavior in the presence of me was only like action on a publick Stage, and that the evil of her natural inclinations were hid from me under the vail of silence and seeming modesty. And indeed my palate was bed-ridden; and so scarce sensible of sauce, much less of meat. But since I have had such ill luck in marriage, which some vainly and falsely account a merry-age, I shall in the ensuing discourse give you some instructions or advice as Land-marks. For having split upon this Rock, I may the better be a Pilot to another that would sail this way.

Love 'tis confess'd is a Natural distemper, a kind of small Pox; most have either had it, or is to expect it, and the sooner the better. Surely I was never well cur'd on't, or else I had not thus fallen in a relaps. Want of knowledge misguid'd me at first, and so I fell into

a *Quagmire*; but I knew not what posselt me to ride afterward into another one purpose. Love seeds when it grows up to Matrymony is good for nothing, like some Fruit-trees which must be transplanted before they will bring forth any thing. And when love in this nature doth seed, the encrease thereof is dissatisfaction, sorrow and vexation multiplyed. This aforementioned is not truely love but lust; for I cannot believe that that noble passion can be the ruine of its subject; neither would I have it disparaged by so unworthy an object as a woman. If there be love, it should be to Heaven, a male-friend, relations, or our Countries preservation, and not to a Female imperfection. And yet nothing will serve the turn, but monopolizing it by Marriage, because we would make it surely our own, and nevertheless our own till then. For if she be young, she is like an *Hawk* upon her wing; and if she be handsome, she is the more subject to go out at check. Faulkners that can but seldome spring right game, should still have something to take them down. The lure to which all stoop in this World, is either garnisht with profit or pleasure, and when you cannot throw her the one, you must be content to shew out the other. Consider again that woman (besides the trouble) is a rent-charge which though the curiosity of man hath often unclosed, yet he cannot for his life stop so well one gap, but it will lye open for any stragler; by which means it seldome improves or becomes fruitful. And why should a woman be denyed the liberty of breaking a pain in her own window, or not admitted the freedom of regrest to her own salliport, letting in whom she esteems as friends? if you will not give them the permission, you must be forc'd to wink when they take it, or do do worse, cross them, and they will endeavour the not leaving a cross in your Pocket. Take

it which way you will, marriage is the dearest way of curing love. Faring with such, as it doth with those for the most part that at great charges walls in grounds and plant; who cheaper might have eaten Mellons elsewhere, than Cucumbers in their own Garden. Besides, it is a grosse piece of ignorance to be bound up to love for an age, when the cause of love may perish for a month, and then the effect may follow. If it be natures plant in the face, that doth induce you; those beautiful flowers of red and white, a disease will quickly wither; if not, ravishing time will deflowre the choicest beauty.

But the ill consequents of Marriage are more to be considered, which are commonly drawn from the evil inclinations of that Sex; *Eve* by stumbling at the Serpents Sollicitations cast her Husband out of Paradiſe; nor are her Daughters surer of foot, being foundred by the heat of lust and pride. It were something if marriage could answer the expectation of all she boasts the cure of; for instead of quenching the hot coals of concupiscence, it aggravates the simple sin of fornication, making it sprought into Adultery. What might be said more as to this Subject, I shall refer the Reader to the Writings of that ingenious Gentleman Mr, *Francis Osborne*. If any more (like boys stript and shivering about the briak) are ready to leap into loves whirl-pit, and so endanger the loss of themselves, let them first look upon love to be an idle fancy, and wedlock of a dangerous consequence. If I could persuade you from loving, one would think the other then would be disregarded, but some to their costs can speak the contrary. In the first place, marry none but whom you love: for he that marries where he doth not love, will love where he did not marry. If you are prone to love one particular person, some are of opinion that

travel is an excellent remedy : for absence doth in a kind remove the cause, removing the object. Others think that frequent visits ( where as the rariety of them increases the affection ) may by a surprisal discover some defects, which though they cure not absolutely, yet they quallifie the vehement heat of an amorous Favour, and as near as can be, let it be unseasonably, either when she is in sickness or disorder, by that a man may know she is but mortal, and but a woman ; the last would be enough to a wise man for an Antidote. Enter into discourse with her of things she daily hears not, and it will confirm the cure. Neither will it be amiss to contrive your self into the company of variety, especially such beauties which are generally cry'd up; and if you can, taste them all, (but now I think on't, it is no matter, one is sufficient for a surfeit) for this Malady is better remedy'd this way, than by abstinence: good jovial company will much conduce to the cure.

But, I like not the prescription of Marriage, since it is the last and most dangerous receipt; like a kind of live Pigeons apply'd to the soles of the feet, which remedy to say truth, is worse than the disease: Where it possible for a Woman to be constant to one, something might be said, but I never yet tryed any which did not very much shew their displeasures when offered some kindness, but never found any to refuse them, if opportunity and privacy of place admitted their reception; which hath made me often in my own thoughts question my mothers honesty and fidelity to my Father.

What I now utter, is not derived from prejudice to that Sex, grounded on my own Wifes disloyalty; but experience tells me this, which most past sixteen very well understand, that there are few Women, let them pretend what they please, but will  
yield

yield to the temptations of the flesh, and so much the sooner, by how much she professeth some new light, which is *ignis fatuus* that leads them into the *Quagmires* of all sorts of erroneous Tenents. With this dark Lanthorn-light they dazle the eyes of such as would pry into their actions, while behind in the dark they sensually satisfy themselves undiscovered.

Experience dictates what I here express; for I have had converse with several of these Religious pretenders, that in the very act would very much inveigh against Adultery with their tongues, whilst their bloods willingly consented to the commission of that sin, and then immediately after seem extremely pensive.

They will make it their daily discourse, speaking against such whose natural inclinations have prompted them to unlawful satisfaction of their lust, and yet they themselves are at the same time studying how they may secretly and securely accomplish the same thing.

To conclude, Woman in general is the very extract of inconstancy, and therefore it is but a vain thing for any to think she can absolutely love one man. Such who are found constant to their Husbands, preferring their welfare before the indulging of their own by-respects, ought to be lookt on no less than Miracles of their Sex, by such who are acquainted generally with Female dispositions and actions.

Whilst my credit was good, I thought good to make use of it lest that failing, I should want an opportunity to march off with flying Colours.

To raise my repute amongst my Neighbours; (whom I knew would spread abroad what they had seen) I caus'd a Porter (whom I could intrust) to carry out privately an hundred pound, and a little while

while after to come with a trusty friend of mine with that, and five or six hundred pound bags more on his back, openly carrying them. Upon my receipt hereof, I presently tumbled the Money out of the bag (which had really money in it) on the Counter, purposely making a great noise; having told it over (my friend standing by the while) I put it up; and pretending to lay that aside and take another, I took up the same again, so doing till I had told it over five or six times; then writing in publick view a Receipt, with much civility and respect I dismiss my Gentleman. And thus did I thrice in a months time; so that by this means without suspicion I conveyed away a great quantity of my Goods, which people thought I had sold, and therefore thought me to have a great trade. Report hereby rendred me a man of a vast dealing, so that now I had goods dayly offer'd me, some whereof I received, promising to them payment at three months, others at six, whereas I intended they should stay till her had her twelve Apostles for her Jury. What Wares or Moneyes I could take up, I did, not mattering at what rate. To some of the more wary sort I confest a judgement for their security. I needed not to have spoken in the Singular number, for I deluded four with my Judgements. What commodities I had, I converted into money by a bill of Sale, and so went away, leaving my Creditors to sue out a Statute of *Bankrupt* if they so pleased; which I valued not, if once out of their reach. To my chiefeft Creditor I sent these lines, to the intent he should not tax me with incivility for going away and not sending him word.

*Credit doth strengthen such whose Trades are weak;  
But too much Credit, Sir, did make me break.*



Credit to sinking Trades-men is a prop,  
But had you kept your wares, I'de kept my shop.  
Pray do not blame me, Sir, because I show  
A way to pay those many debts you owe;  
Which you may do, if you'l advised be,  
Which is in short, prepare to follow me.  
Believe me, faithful Sir, in what I say,  
I went before, but to shew you the way:  
But if you will not, don't lament your loss,  
For in your Money I do bear the cross.  
Grief will distract you, and destroy your wit;  
Good Sir, preserve it, for y'ave paid for it.

I rid post for *Holy head* night and day, so that I arrived there in a very short time: going to dismount, I tumbled off, neither could I rise again; continual and unaccustomed riding had almost dislocated every bone in my body, notwithstanding it was swathed for that purpose. The next day I made a shift to walk abroad to view the rarities of the Town, but found nothing rare but handsome Women, Civility, and good Drink. In two daies time we set Sail: we had not ran above three Leagues before the Sky darkned; the Wind blew hard at a South-east, and the Waves rose mountain high: In an hours time we were forced to cut our Masts by the board, and lightning the Ship as much as we could, to let her drive. Every man fell to his Prayers, expecting every moment when they should be swallowed up by the Sea. As for my part, I now thought divine vengeance had overtaken me, and would reckon with me for all my rogueries; I lookt on my self as *Jonas*, and was much troubled that others should suffer for my iniquities. About three a clock in the morning we heard a hideous noise occasioned by the beating of the Sea against the Rocks, which was echoed by the loud  
an.

and lamentable cries of the Seamen, who knew there was no hopes for us. Now could I pray heartily, that I had never pray'd in my life before : but my devotion was soon spoiled, for the Ship struck in between two Rocks. I lookt out, and me thought the dashing of the waves lookt perfectly like flashes of Fire. Here she stuck a little while, which gave five of us opportunity to leap out upon a Rock : we were no sooner there, before a wave fetcht her off, but brought her on again, and split her all in pieces. We five in the mean time riding a stride on a Rock behind one another, like so many Criminals on a *Woodden-horse*: Sometimes a wave would strike clear over us, which indangered our walking off. Sometimes we thought to let go our hold, as looking upon our preservation to be impossible ; and withal imagining that the tide was coming in. At last the hindmost could hold no longer, but crying, *Lord have mercy on my Soul*, committed himself to the merciless Sea. Immediately came a tumbling Sea and washt off the next ; now did I expect that every wave would prove my Executioner. But it was not decreed ( I suppose ) that I should be drown'd. Day broke, so that we could discern we were not a Coits cast from the shore, and that the Sea was ebbing. We waited not above an hour before we crawled to shore, for go we could not, our joynts were so benum'd by the cold. We got up the Beach, and could discern a little way distant a small Cottage ; thither we repaired with much difficulty, and were kindly entertain'd, pittied, and inform'd where we were. We stay'd about a week in this Isle of *Man*, without one farthing expence. For the Inhabitants are generally very civil, and courteous, especially to strangers, from thence we imbarkt for *Dublin*.

We landed at a place called *Ringsend* about a

mile from *Dublin*. I was askt whether I would have a Coach. Where are there any, said I? (for I lookt about me, and could see nothing like a Coach) the fellow lookt upon me to be a very ignorant person, because I understood not what he meant, and angrily spake thus: *By my Gossips hand, thou canst not see very much well, arre look here is one by thine own side.* It was a great while before I could tell what language he spoke, he did so tone his words; neither could I understand him, till one standing by interpreted him. As for his *Ringend-Coach*, as he called it, it was Wheel-barrow fashion; only it had two wheels not much bigger then a large *Cheshire-Cheese*: the Horse that drew this Princely-pygmy-Chariot, I at first mistook for an over-grown Mastiff; but viewing him narrowly, found him the extract (by his shape) of a *Scotch-Hobby*; well, up I mounted, but could not invent a name for the manner of my riding, for I was neither coacht nor carted, but I fancied my self (and that justly) as I was riding, to be some notorious Malefactor drawn on a Sledge to the place of execution, which afterwards experimentally I found *Dublin* to be: many of its Inhabitants call this Citty *Divlin*, quasi *Diavels-Inn*, and very properly it is by them so termed; for there is hardly a Citty in the world that entertains such variety of devils imps as that doth. If any knavishly break, murder, rob, or are desirous of Polygamy, they would straight repair thither, making that place, or the Kingdom in general, their Azylum, or Sanctuary. My first care was to plant my self conveniently; the next day I sent for a Barber to shave my hair off, ordering him to bring a periwig of a contrary colour to my own hair, so the intent that if I should meet any of my acquaintance, they might not know me, whereby I should prevent their

their sending notice to any where I was. The truth of it is, in this disguise I hardly knew my self. The greatest difficulty I found, was to make my self familiar with my fictitious name. At first when my Landlady called me by that name, I either stair'd her in the face, or lookt behind me, (not answering thereunto) thinking she had spoke to some man else: but had I not pretended to be thick of hearing, and so that way apologizing for my silence, my design might have been marr'd. I daily met with several that I knew, but would not take the least cognizance of them.

In this manner I spent a moneth, but all this while no tydings of my Goods and Money; that which I had brought with me was all consumed. My Landlady (as it is customary there, having as little trust or faith as they have Religion) called upon me for what I owed her. For a little while, I stop't her mouth, by telling her I had a considerable quantity of goods and money too coming, which I expected by every fair wind. A little while after I heard the Ship in which they were was cast away. Now did I absolutely conclude Gods just judgement attended my fraud and knavery. My loss I did not in the least discover to any, knowing I should reap at first only some pitty, and afterwards be undervalued and disrespected. My Hostess again was very importunate with me to have her reckoning: I endeavoured to put her off, saying, I expected daily Bills of Exchange; but she would not believe me; for I perceived that she had been often cheated with such delusions.

Now did I not know what to do: I thought good to try another way; she being a Widdow, I fancied I could work upon her Female frailty: I used all means possible to get her alone; which I did but seldom, and then did I make use of all my Rhetorick to perswade

her into a belief how dearly I loved her : she replied little, but would laugh at me till she held her sides again. I verily believe she understood my drift, which I might argue from her expressions. Sometime she would say, Come, come, away with these love-fooleries, and pay me what you owe. Then would I tell her, all I enjoyed, and my self too, were properly hers, and that she might take them when she pleased into her possession. No, no, she would say, my youthful days are past, and it is time for me to look Heavenwards ; wherefore let fall your suit, &c.

Since words would no wayes prevail, I resolved to try something else, knowing how difficult it is for a Woman when in bed to refuse a Venereal proffer. To that purpose one night I came softly into her chamber, and grooping with my hand for her face, I caught a man by the beard, at which he awaked, and thinking the Devil was come to trim him, or rob him of his wash-balls, would have cryed out aloud, but that fear had so lockt up his voice, that his highest note was little louder then whispering ; I could but just hear him say, *In the name of God-----what art ?* I am, said I, (and then she wak'd too) no Ghost, but a living witness of your leachery ; to that intent I came hither, to be fully satisfied of what I have a long time suspected. As for you Madam, *your youthfull dayes are past*, but your lust will endure for ever.

If this be your way to Heaven, why were you so uncharitable as not to let me go along with you ? As for your part, Sir, I believe that you are travelling that way too ; for if I mistake not, you lately came out of Purgatory.

To be short, they both intreated me to be silent, and retire to my own lodging, and that in the morning they would treat with me to my full satisfaction. This

This was what I aimed at, though brought about otherwise than intended. Early they both came to me, the pious Gentle woman being very tender of her credit, would forgive me her debt, if I would not blemish her reputation by my report ; her Gallant gave me ten pieces to bind the bargain : having gotten a discharge under her hand, I sealed our contract with an Oath and faithful promise not to divulge their shame. The Gentleman (though his estate much exceeded hers) out of spight, I think, or vexation to be so caught, *incontinently* married her, though all former solicitations (which I understood were many) proved ineffectual,

---

## CHAP. X V.

*He is driven to extreme necessity; he describes what it is to be indigent, by what he suffered in that condition. He falling accidentally into a strange house, endeavours to build a Sconce, but is frustrated of his intent. The old Hostess pities him at first, and relieves him, and continually after feeds him for her own peculiar dyet ; further insisting on the misery he then endured. He makes a ramble into the Country, takes some observations as he travelleth ; and is soundly beaten for attempting to board a small It sh Pinnacle.*

**T**HIS ten pound I received from my old leacherous Dotard, made its *Exit* almost as soon as its entrance into my pocket : by that sum I thought to have purchased Mountains in Ireland (and indeed there is to great plenty of them there,) by gaming ; but experience told me afterwards that my design was hazardous, and



and so it proved, for I met with a person that bubbled me at Hazard, not leaving me a penny, and ingaged besides for my proportion of the reckoning. My Gamester dealt too hardly with me; yet it was but just, for I intended to show him as little favour, if compell'd to lye at my mercy, which I verily thought would be, having various Utensils about me to that purpose, but I was over-matcht.

*I thought my self secure, for I could top,  
By which I've forc'd some Cits to leave their shop;  
I palm'd, and put the change upon them too;  
I only studyed how I might undo.  
But now I'm met with, 'tis but just I see,  
That he which others cheats, should cheated be.*

I returned to my lodging, (which was none of the best) with what anxiety and perturbation of mind, I shall give any looser leave to imagine, whilst the remembrance thereof enforceth me to speak; and I hope the Reader will give me that liberty, since the Proverb intaileth on the looser that priviledge. I acquainted my Landlord with my misfortune, who seem'd very much to condole me for the present, but it was afterwards the occasion of his not crediting me. From hence, I will advise all to speak as little as they can of ills that beide them; but we cannot discourse to much of the good that happens to us. Perceiving my Landlord grew cold, my spirit was too high to be any longer behold-ing to him but for my lodging; wherefore I seldome came home till night. Neither would I tell my condition to any that knew me. Sometimes I should meet with some in the street, who would ask me to drink with them: I told them, I came from it even now, saying that such a Gentleman, with two or three more besides my  
O self

self had drank so much, and that I admired at my self for being so sober; whereas to deal ingenuously, I had not drank one drop that day. Another seeing me, would ask me whether I would dine with him at the Ordinary? then would I pretend that my Lord--- Gentleman over-perswaded me to dine with him, and that we had such variety, that I doubted my stomach had received some detriment thereby; and therefore beg'd an excuse; whereas a dry crust taken out of my *Leathern Cupboard* was all the varieties the *Gentleman-Usher* of my stomach, my throat I mean, had taken cognizance of that day. So hard it was too, that I would look this way, and that way, not daring to commit it to the engine of my Chops, unless there was none near me within a furlong; for had there been any near me, they would have sworn I was eating walnut shells and all. Now did I learn to drink water, which necessity made me to commend as the most sovereign liquor, and most suitable to the body of man; otherwise *Adam* in *Paradise* would not have been without a cup of ALE.

Every morning I offer'd up my Devotions either to *St. Patrick*, or *St. James*, each of which have two excellent Wells dedicated to the honour of their Saints. Thither did I repair constantly twice or thrice a day: after I had offered up the fumes of smoak (most commonly of none of the best Tobacco) I kneeled, not using the common-way of drinking out of the chained Iron dish, but with greater adoration suckt it as it came through the conveyance. After a walk to *Kilmanagh* (about a mile from *Dublin*) or some other place to prepare my stomach, I return'd to *Christ Church*, frequently dining there with *Sir Richard Strangebow*. Reflecting on his cheer, and the liquor of those two Saints, I cannot but tell you my thoughts of both.

*Sir Richard Strang bow keeps an house where wine  
 And bread some sup on. but few seldom dine.  
 Ask yet an hungry Rambler, and he'll say,  
 (Though not one bit came near his mouth that day)  
 He plentifully din'd with him, so let him still  
 Till he hath found his empty belly fill.  
 Where I ne're could, which made me bate in fine  
 Sir Richard Strang-bows Feasts, St. Patricks Wine.*

I fasted so long, I had now almost forgot how to eat: for if casually I came where meat was, I often made a proffer to convey something to my mouth, but my lips understood not my meaning; for having been so long accustomed to their duty, knew nor how to perform their gaping office. It was impossible at this time for the greatest fright to have made me foul my breeches, because I seldome used any thing that might cause extremities. And therefore I wondered to hear any enquire for an house of Office, since I had now left off going to stool. Once in five days I thought I stood in need of evacuating; but I was mistaken, for by discharging a blast of wind (whose fury scattered small stones underneath me) I found it only a fit of the cholick. I shall deal plainly, should I have found a propensity, I would have been very unwilling to let any thing go out, since so little past into my belly. Some moveables I had left, which I was forced to dispose of, to keep the passage of my guts open, which would frequently grumble against my stomach for detaining too long what was received, challenging a propriety therein. I thought it good policy not to buy any belly timber of a quick concoction, because it should stay the longer within me. To this purpose I lookt on old Cheese to be food convenient; knowing that though it will digest any thing else, yet it cannot digest it self;

and as it closeth up the mouth of the stomach, so by its respective quality it locks up fast the Postern of the Micro-cosm. Flesh again (if I got any) I would swallow by whole sale, fearing lest by chewing it, my stomach would too suddenly give it a passport to my *Hypogastrium*; by which means it would be immediately ready again, nay restless in the craving more. I seldom slept for the knowing of my stomach, and the anguish of my guts, and for want of those fumes which proceeding from meat ascended into the head, and so the causers of sleep. If I chanced to nod at any time, I dreamed of nothing but eating, my fancy feeding that while as voraciously as an hunger-starved hound on a shoulder of Mutton, I was driven to that pass, I could not justly tell whether I was a live or not. Sometimes I was of the opinion that I dyed in our Ship-wrack on the Isle of *Man*, and that I was now a Soul in Purgatory.

Immediately after my arrival in this place, the Itch and *Bunniab*, or Flux, (the two grand Epidemical distempers of Ireland) gave me their welcome into their Country, attended by a great number of six-footed Gentlemen, clad in a gray livery, with one single list down the back; who all promised to stick to me and be my bosome friends, neither would they forsake me as long as life lasted. But they like the rest of the best and fairest promising friends left me, when fortune committed me prisoner to the merciless cruel hands of that accursed Goaler, Poverty. I was grown so lean, that the mungrel Scotch and Irish Gentleman the itch, finding not flesh enough to feed on, gave me the French complement, *Adieu pauvre Gentilhomme*. The Flux staid with me as long as any thing was left in my belly, but finding no substance from Guts, took his leave also, unkindly carrying away all that was within me. Their retinue perceiving they were like to  
feed

feed on hard meat, there being little left but bones, whose teeth were incapable of fastning thereon, resolv'd to follow after; some making more than ordinary haste, broke their necks off the Cape of my cloak, missing their footing, the threads thereof being spun out by time as fine as those of *Aracknies* working.

To conclude, I was a meer walking *Skeleton*, my skin only serv'd as a mantle for my bones. But for wind, my belly would have contradicted an approved Philosophical Axiome, proving a *Vacuum*.

One time passing by the Castle-gate, a Souldier fir'd his Musquet, and I protest methought my belly sounded like a Drum at the report. Should I relate every particular wherein the malevolency of fortune afflicted me, I should much tire the Reader, as well as perplex my self with remembrance; wherefore I shall desist, and give you leave to imagine the deplorableness of his condition, who hath neither Monies, Friends, nor Credit, and in a place where he is neither acquainted with the People nor their Language.

I was by this time grown so feeble by fasting, or by the manner of my feeding, which was either cheese or hard eggs, (there being great plenty) that I could hardly go; and so light I was by continual smoaking, that I questioned often whether I was not a meer fume my self; fearing still when I walkt abroad, to be extracted by the Sun for an exhalation. Fortune so favour'd me one day, that I found a Groat, which put me into an extasie of joy. I know not what Magical power there was in that vast sum of *four pence*, for in an instant, knowing by what means, I found my self in a *Viſtualling-house*, so speedy was my conveyance, as if I had been riding some *Demon* through the Air. I called for some meat, but my voice sounded so hollow, as if I had spoken in a vault.

Some said, it was the *Eccho* of some person speaking in the next house: others of the wiser sort believed me to be some *Spectrum*, Apparition; and that the Devil had assum'd a body speaking in that *mortuum cadaver*. The truth of it is, 'twas something hard to determine, whether I spake or no, but that they might perceive my lips to open. There was a Physician in the house at that time, who looking on me narrowly, openly proclaim'd that I was the workmanship of some Mortal, who having first gotten the Skeleton, or bones of a man, had artificially skinn'd them over, and that German-clock-work caus'd my motion. I would have laugh'd heartily at their ridiculous apprehensions, but that I had forgot how. I had some Gall left in me still, which made me start up in as great a rage as my feeble body was able to declare, intending to demonstrate to them how grossly they were mistaken; but perceiving me to approach, they all fled but Mr. Doctor, whom shame retain'd, otherwise by a fit of an Ague (which just then possess'd him) I knew he would willingly have been gone too. *Speak* (said he tremblingly) *what art?* I was somewhat puzzled at his question, for I knew not well what I was: I am a living man, said I. *Why then thou wouldst have flesh*, said he. After several discourses to this purpose, I at length made him partly believe that I was no such thing he imagined. And yet he would be asking me still a many impertinent questions, as whether I could see; and his reason was, because he could discern no eyes. Whether I was born without eyes, or lost them since accidentally, &c. I was forced to tell him at last that it was the Country disease that had reduced me to this condition. Hearing me say so, he pitied me much, and told me he would fetch instantly something that should do me much good. I thank'd him, and away went Mr. Doctor.



The good Woman over-hearing our discourse, drew near then confidently, and demanded what I would have ? I told her any thing which was eatable, as far a groat would go. She brought me some hot meat, and setting it before me, went for some drink, but before she could return I had swallowed it all : she feicht me more, which went the same way with as much celerity. But like quick-silver it wrought quite through me, not staying a quarter of an hour.

The manner whereof was thus : about to pay my reckoning, my groat got into a piece of paper ; I fumbled a great while in my pocket, but found it not, which put me even to my wits ends. At last drawing out some papers, and shaking them my Groat dropt ; perceiving its fall might be dangerous, there being many holes in the Floor, I catcht after it ; notwithstanding it fell upon the very brink of an hole ; what with haste to recover it, and the fright of the danger put me into, I discharged my self of every bit I had eaten. There was no body could say, I had fouled my Breeches, or that I stunk ; which I made appear to my Landlady, by shewing her what I had evacuated, but little differing from what I had eaten a quarter of an hour before. The good old woman perswaded me strongly to eat it again ; for, said she, it cannot be much the worse for just passing through you, and I will try it, if you please. I thought I should now have dyed with laughter at her strange proposition ; but the woman star'd upon me, not knowing whether I grin'd or laugh. Well, well, said she at last, if you will not eat such good victuals, some body else shall. I offered her my groat, which she refused, telling me there was as much more to pay ; I told her that was all the moneys I had about me, and that I would pay her the rest the next day,

*But she for her part thought it was unjust,  
To listen to the arguments of trust.*

And therefore told me plainly she would have her Reckoning. I bid her stay a while : then as soon as she had turned her back, I attempted to march off, but my strength failing me, I wanted swiftness, and so was brought back. I made her acquainted with my condition, how miserable it was ; I needed not many Arguments to perswade any into that belief, for my person was the true Embleme of misery. She gave a serious attention to what I exprest, and at last melted into tears, commiserating my misfortunes ; she caused instantly a bed to be warm'd, where being laid, she ordered a Cawdle to be made, and in fine shew'd a world of kindness to me, not imagining what she aim'd at. She would not let me stir out of my bed, but whilst it was making, for above a week ; at the conclusion of which I began to recover a little colour in my cheeks, and grew indifferent strong ; she gave me moneys in my pocket, and told me I must walk into the fields with her. I blest my self, and that Angel that directed my feet to the finding that lost groat which was the occasion of my restitution to a condition of living again. By this time I imagined what my old Gentlewoman expected : wherefore in the first place I acknowledged how much I was obliged to her matchless civilities, and that it was impossible for me to return her answerable satisfaction. Rowling her pretty Piggs-eyes to and fro in her head, I require (said she) nothing but your love. If it must needs be so (thought I) there is no way better than to let fancy from her beautiful, and so by the force of imagination I shall enjoy as much pleasure as if lying with *Venus*, though in conjunction with this Succubus.

*cubus*. We us'd not many ceremonies, (like puling-whining Lovers, that are alwayes saying Grace, but never fall to) but taking the convenience of a Ditch underneath a bushy-ropt hedge we conferred notes. Had any seen us in this posture, they would have concluded old Winter metamorphis'd into an old woman lying in a Dike, and that *Flora* was converted into a young man, and both in an unnatural Conjunction. Or that youthful *Phebus* had contracted his rays to court a lump of Ice, but with shame was forced to desist, finding his powerfvl endeavours ineffectual in the production of the thaw. Whenever I wanted a small sum, a kisse or two, or the saying I loved her, extracted so much as supply'd my present occasions; if I wanted a sum considerable; why then a quarter of an hours discourse in private effected my desires. Most that knew me wondered what politic stratagems I us'd that so suddenly wound my self out of that Labyrinth of all sorts of miseries, and that I appeared both in feature and garb so excentrick to my former condition. I had as many pretences to blind the world, as there were suspicions of pragmatick persons. In short, I was now very well apparhed, well furnish'd with moneys, I kept my Horse, nay my Whore too; this I made use of for what she had. So seemingly happy was the present state of my life, that I deem'd it impossibly unalterable by any decree of fate.

I began now to be somewhat weary of the City, and therefore resolv'd to refresh my self with the Country Air. I acquainted my Patronnesse therewith; who with much regret condescended, conditionally two days should be the utmost time of my absence.

That morning I sēt forth, there was such solemn leave taken between us, as if my voyage had been intended

intended for the *Indies*. About to amount, she retrieved my intentions clasping me in her arms ; I should rather have chosen the imbraces of a she Bear, as thinking her breath far sweeter ; and truly I have often wondered at my recovery in so impure and unwholsom air. Being on Horse-back she so bathed her Cheeks with tears (wanting no moisture, derived from an everlasting spring of humours distilling from her head) that you would have sworn she was the representation of the Pig-woman in *Ben's Bartholmew* fair. Had not her watry flood-gates drowned her eyes, I think she would have stood looking after me that way I rid till my return. Well, there is no fool like the old doting fool : and where I again to love for interest, I would choose such a person. Your young skittish things that only minde their pleasures, think they have done a man a courtesie that merits reward, if they admit him into their private familiarity, because they finde fond men so passionate and impatient in the prosecution of his desires : and then again, having variety of Couriers they are so sensible, that if one will not meddle with the bait, a second will nibble at it so long till he is caught with the hook. Whereas a woman stricken in years, and having lost her beautiful allurements is disregarded, and looked on as no fit subject for love to treat on ; not but she may have youthful desires as any ; and if that way inclin'd, none so prone as she. For knowing she hath nothing but her wealth to attract withal, she will freely part with it for her satisfaction ; and that she may not loose her Stallion, constantly encourage him even to the exhausting of what she hath. Moreover, finding the man to answer her expectations, she studies all wayes immaginable how to please him in every thing, that he may please her in that one thing.

But to my purpose: coming to *Balle-more Enslace*, a little beyond the Town, (which is in the County of *Wicklow*) there is a small River, in the Summer time not above knee-deep; I perceived a young Woman, about to cross it; drawing to the water, she stood not on the niceties of modesty, but pulled up her cloaths to the waste. The sight hereof stopt me, and as near as I could opposite to her. She minded me not, but came straight over to me, and at about three yards distance let down her Coats. I observed so many excellencies that my blood began to boyl, and my flesh was all of a flame; for her hair which naturally curled, and was plated, was of a bright flaxen, each hair in the Sun glittered like a thread of Gold.

Heretake notice by the way, that the Maids for the most part, Winter and Summer, go without any coverings on their head, which they wash all over every night; the meaner sort as soon as married wear Kerchiefs. She had an Angelical countenance, only somewhat brownish by the Suns frequent kissing of it; I may adjudge that a deformity. The skin of her body might vye with snow for whiteness, &c. I dismounted and addrest my self to her in English; she answered me in her own language, she understood me not: then did I make use of that little *Irish* I had learned, which were some fragments of lecherous expressions, to which she replied, but I understood her not. To be brief, I so far prevailed that I got her into a small wood, in which the thick and spreading tops of the trees seemed to lay their heads together in conspiracy to keep not only the Suns entry, but also the curious search of any mortals eye. She permitted me to kisse, dally, lay my hands on her thighs, &c. which were the only Preludiums of what should follow. But herein I mistook, for their dispositions are much different from the

*English.*

*English.* We use to say, that where we gain over a woman the liberty to use the hand, we cannot fail in doing what we most desire: whereas quite contrary they will without the least opposition permit the first but with the greatest difficulty admit of the last. For as she saw me ready to ingage, she cryed out incessantly, *Whillallaloo*; and presently I could hear this ululation echoed. I had just recovered my Horse, when two or three fellows came running to me, the one with a Flail, the rest with long Poles. The first salutation I received was from a Flail, which failed but little of doing my business: the next my Horses Crupper received the poor beast being civilly bred, could do no less than return them a Congee with his leg, which made one of them fall on his knees to his Master, as if he had been Monarch of that Soil. These two Rogues stood still by to me, insomuch that I knew not what course to take. The Villains were so nimble, that one of them was continually before me hindring my flight, while the other drub'd me forward. I bethought my self of a Pistol I had in my pocket charged with a Bullet; drew it, presented, and pretended I would fire if they desisted not; for these stupid fellows apprehended not the danger; perceiving how stupidly senseless they were, I fired it full in the face of him that fronted me, who verily believ'd he had been shot, and so the rest of conceit (for they are naturally very timorous) fell down as dead; the other seeing that, ran away as swift as lightning, whereby I had leave to ride on, which I did (you may think) with no ordinary speed. Lovers may talk of their sufferings by their Mistress's frowns or obdurateness, but let any one judge of mine by the blows I received; fighting is nothing to fighting, and a few tears are not to come in competition with dry basting. Pox on them, they made me out of con-



ceit of love for six weeks after. I never thought of enjoying a woman since ; but the remembrance of those three Bog-trotters converted the hot fit of my amorous Fever into a cold one.

A little way from *Baltinglass* I took up my quarters for that night. The Inne I lay in was one story high, abought the height of an extraordinary Pig-sty, and there was one Chimney in it too, more then there is to be found in one of an too such Hovils. The good man welcom'd me after this fashion, but I think an *Anthropophagus* or Indian Man-eater would have done it as civilly. I bid him set up my Horse by signs, (for that was the language we convers'd in) but alas! there was no other stable but what was at the end of our Kitchen ; our Dining-room, Bed-chamber, Pig-sty, Pantry, and Buttery being all one, without distinction or Separation. Some few Wattles (as they call them) were placed above, that was our Hay-loft. The only door of our Inne was a large hurdle, much like a sheep-pen. The *Bannette* or good wife of the house could speake a little broken *English*. I askt her what I should have for supper ? *Thou shalt have a Supper said she for St. Patrick a gra.* I staid an half hour expecting when she would lay down something to the fire, but instead thereof she brings me in a wooden platter a great many Leeks, in the bottom whereof was a good quantity of Bay-salt, and withal a loaf as black as if the Meal had been wetted with ink. *See'st thou rare, Christ himself nor St. Patrick did ever eat better ting.* I could not forbear smileing, which put her into a great passion : for if a man eats not what they set before him, they think themselves highly affronted. Because I would not displease them, I pretended to eat, conveying it into my Boots. After supper I askt them for a clean Pipe ; the woman brought me one

one about an inch long, telling me it was very clean, for her Husband had not smokt in it above ten times. I judg'd it to be the ruines of the first Pipe that was made, which was conveyed from one of that family to another, conditionally they should constantly smoke in it without burning it. They offered me some snuff too; which is one of the greatest kindneses they can either show or be shown. I called for some drink, (to try whether that corresponded with the rest) and so it did, for there was no swallowing it without chewing. Finding but little satisfaction, I desired to go to bed. That I should instantly; they said, but I wondered where they intended to lay me. In a little while in came a lusty wench with a bundle of rushes on her head, my bed it seemed by the sequel, which she spreading on the ground, covered them with a *Caddow* or Rugg. Here I must lye or no where, patience was my only comfort; wherefore stripping my self to my Drawers and Stockings, I laid my self down. About two hours after came in two Cows, three or four Pigg, some Ducks and Geese, (which they brought not in before, out of civility to me.) All their Family being within doors: the good Man, his Wife, and two Daughters, stripping themselves stark naked, lay down altogether by my side, which seem'd somewhat strange to me. I could hardly forbear the two young ones, but that my late misfortune was so fresh in my memory.

I could not sleep all that night, wherefore very early I discharged my reckoning, and so set forward for *Dublin* with all the expedition I could not liking the Country-entertainment. I would not ride the same way back as I came, to avoid my bone-breakers, but it had been as well; for coming to a River that I must ford, I askt a fellow which was the safest place: he pretended no knowledge of what I said, wherefore making signs

to him, he answer'd me again with his hand, directing me to such a place ; at the first step my Horse and I plunged over head and ears ; and had not my Horse been strong, we had both perished. With much difficulty we got up the bank on the other side, and looking behind me, the villain was e'ne almost out of sight. Such causeless revenge they frequently exercise towards the *English*, naturally hating us with a perfect antipathy. I returned at length to my old Hostess, resolving when next I undertook such a journey, I would steer by the compass of other mens experience.

---

## CHAP. XVI.

The manner of his stealing an Hoghead of French wine from the Custom-house. His Landlady dyeth, and so is left again to live by his wits ; his Comerade is hanged, with some Hints of his desperate, irreligious, and Atheistical tenents. He passeth for a Batchellor, courts several under the pretence of marrying them, by which he perswades some out of their Maiden-heads ; others out of their money : with which he goes for England, at Chester he cheats his Land lord, where having all things requisite to compleat an High way-man, followeth that trade: he is met with by some of that Gang who intending to rob him, he discovers his intentions, and they admit of him into their Society. Some instructions given by our grand master thief.

Tracing the Street, I chanced to cast my eye on a Fellow, the slowness of whose pace informed me of the idleness of his condition. His garb was so preposterously

posterously unsuitable, that a man could not possibly look on him without excessive laughter. To the intent you may participate with me in the same sport, I shall open his Wardrobe. In general there was not any thing he did wear that had not some times another property and of which one might derive another Pedigree. The Hat he had on was devested of all royal dignity, having lost its Crown, and yet his crime would not be allowed of as Capital, But what it wanted in one place, was supplied in another, the brims whereof being so large, they might have conveniently served as a Pent-house for another besides himself. But this ingenious Squire politickly had pin'd up on the one side, that he might have some light to discern his way; his Hat thus pin'd up on the one side, lookt much like a trap-door pull'd up. His Band was so torn and dirty, as if he had but just come from some fray; and lest passion should prove obnoxious, time had done him that courtesie to purge away his choler. In what condition his Doublet was behind, I could plainly discover through the holes of his Cloak, which generally was so transparent, that the rents and patches of several colours of his cloaths were as visible as if you had lookt through Lawn. The forepart of his Doublet and Breeches I am confident were the off-spring of the Furniture of a Billiard-table. His Cloak proceeded from a Boat-tilt, whose Grandfather was an Horse-cloth; and I could not look on his Breeches, but it put me in mind of the *Scotch* flaggs that hung up in *Westminster*. His skirts were so liquor'd and greas'd, that in case of extremity they might have serv'd for belly-peices, not using any thing but their own farnels to fry them in. By his countenance he seem'd like a man of courage and ingenuity, and so I could not choose but endeavour his relief. Wherefore I accosted him, pretending I had seen him somewhere  
but

but could not for the present call to mind the place. His necessity made him assent to whatever I said; and desiring his company to an Ale-house, he readily granted my request. By what unhappy accident he became thus miserable, I know not, but the man was well furnished both with natural and acquir'd parts. Having had various discourses of several matters, and that we began to be familiarly acquainted, I askt him why he wrapt himself up so close in his Cloak? O Sir, said he (*to be plain*) *I have a maim'd Doublet, and I have heard some say, there is nothing more prejudicial to a wound than the intromission of Air; which that Net-work garment of yours (said I) will never be able to keep out.* He reply'd, *'Tis true, Sir, I finde it so, but I wish it were a Net, for then I might employ my self by fishing.*

I was so well pleased in my new acquaintance, that (bidding him stay there till my return, which should be speedy) I went and procured him all things necessary for to cover his nakedness; the last thing he put on was his shoes; finding them to have soles, they added new life to him.

Having thus cast (*Colt-like*) his ragged Coat, I was not ashamed to walk with him in the streets; coming to the Custom-house we saw several Pipes and Hogheads of Wine. Viewing all the places belonging thereunto, said I, methinks it is no difficult matter to steal one of those Hogheads, had I but assistance. You shall not want mine, Sir, (said he) even to the hazard of my life, which I shall never look on as a sufficient requital for this singular favour you have now conferr'd on me. Having walkt there a while, we went to a place call'd *Lazy hill*, where I found out 2 or 3 pure rogues, one had a boat. I informed them of my design; they willingly promised their helping hand, & the time appointed for the effecting our intentions, was that

P

right

night about twelve. Accordingly we all met, and having procured an empty Hogshhead, we fill'd it with water, and away we went in the Boar. The tide ebbing had left dry ground underneath the Key, where I plant-ed three of our company, instructing them that as-soon they found the Coast clear above, they should with slings ( which they had for that purpose ) leave the Hogshhead of water, and exchange it for one of wine ; which done, they should march off immediately. I and my new Comrade marcht up the Custom-house stairs, where we encountred with two old Watchmen. They askt us what our business was, we told them we had no other design but to drink with them, having been a little frolicksome the other side the water. The old Watchmen were very joyful at the news, and so giving one of them money to fetch some drink, the other carried me to the Lodge. The drink being come, they minded that so much, they had forgotten their duty ; and I ply-ed them so close with whole ones, that they were incapable of holding on more : in the mean time my Comregues were gone, pretending our boat was a drift : we took our leaves ; being five of us concern'd, we scorned to sell our wine, but contracting with some to finde Sugar, with others *Westphalia hams*, or such like relishing meats, and with others to be at the expence of Musick, but every one to be at his own charge for Wenches ; we never gave over ranting and roaring till we had drained the Hogshhead dry.

In the height of our jollity, word was brought me that my Landlady was dangerously sick, and that she desired to speak with me instantly ; thinking it was only a fit of lecherous and salacious itch, I made no great haste, but at length I went : Assoon as I entred within her doors, I received the sad tydings of her death. I ran up stairs (not believing this report, because I would



not have it so) but found it too true: viewing her as she lay, I perceived her hand fast clincht: I took it into mine, and wrenching it open, there dropt ten peices of Gold, which I conceive she intended to have bestowed on me whilst living, as her last Legacy. I conveyed them privately into my Pocket, and presently made enquiry how she had disposed of her Estate; but I received but little or no satisfaction herein, only to my great vexation, I heard she often to the very last called much upon me.

I stayed not above two or three days in the house, but I was forced to leave it.

I met with my obliged friend, to whom I communicated my late misfortune: he like an-experienc'd Stoick counsel'd me to bear my loss patiently, since that it is below a man to repine at any sublunary casualty, much more to sink under the burden of any vexatious cross, or remediless loss. We discoursed what expedient we were best to take, and to encrease our small stocks by some witty exploit. We propounded many things which we approved not of, we thought of turning High way-men; but I dissuaded him from that, by informing him that money was scarce, and that men 500 *l. per annum*, usually travelled thirty or forty miles with a single *Cob*, or piece of eight, not so much for fear of robbing as for want of coyn; and that is the reason that all sorts of provision are very cheap, because there is so great a scarcity of that should purchase them. Why then said he, there is money enough in the Exchequer. Bar said I, it is so difficult to come at, that I will not hazard my life in the attempt. Hearing me speak in this manner, he lookt upon me in derision: saying, *That fear was a passion unworthy to be lodg'd in the Soul of man, and that there is nothing here which a man either should or need to fear, Secundum*

Religionem Stolci: *And that man deserved not the fruition of the least happiness here, that would not, rather than go without it, venture his neck.*

We had so hot a contest about this, that we parted in anger, and never saw him afterwards till I heard of his condemnation, which was occasioned by the prosecution of what he propounded to me. Two or three more besides himself combined to rob the Exchequer, but were apprehended in the enterprise, committed, arraigned at the Bar, convicted and condemned. Hearing hereof, I gave him a visit in Prison; expressing much sorrow for what he was to suffer: but he only laugh'd at me for my pains. I desir'd him to be more serious, since three dayes would put a period to his life, and then he must give an account of what he had done on earth; and that though we might smooth up our selves in all manner of debauchery here, yet without cordial repentance we must suffer for it hereafter. Prethee, said he, do not trouble thy head with such idle fancies; and so broke out into Atheistical mocks and expostulations, not fit to be mention'd: and would have proceeded, but I desir'd him to desist.

Now his prophane and irreligious discourse did so bore my glowing ears, that notwithstanding the wickedness of my own nature, I could not endure to hear him blaspheme; wherefore instead of endeavouring to rectifie his erroneous judgement, (for to speak the truth, my knowledge at that time was but slender in the doctrine of Christianity) I durst not discourse longer with him, but left him to his own Conscience for conviction; which I judg'd would be powerful with him at the place of Execution.

The day being come, I resolv'd to see the final end of my friend. And there did I enjoy the fruits of my hopes and wishes. For as soon as the Halter was about his

his

his neck, he roared so loud with his voice, that it could not but awake the most lethargick conscience that ever the Devil lull'd asleep. There I might see and know by the urinal of his eyes, and the water standing therein, what convulsion-fits his soul suffer'd, his own mouth confessing how grievously his diseased soul was stretched upon the wrack of despair: Then it was that the voluminous Registers of his conscience, which did formerly lye clasp'd in some unsearcht corner of his memory, were laid open before him; and the Devil, who hitherto gave him the lessening end of the prospect to survey his licentious courses and damned opinion, now turned the magnifying end to his eye, which made him cry out at last for mercy, and so was turn'd off.

Being left now to shift for my self, having lost the main prop that sustain'd me in all conditions, husbanding well the advantage of this contrary wind, I presently set the engine of my brain to work, and thus it was; I addrest my self to Courtship. Beauty was not the mark I aimed at, the purchase thereof producing little profit, since it self is most commonly the sole reward; neither can a man attain to it but by great expence, out-vying all therein, least any interpose. Either wealthy and aged Widdows, or thrifty maids, who had laid up what they had gotten in Service as a bait to procure an Husband, such did I daily hunt out and visit them by turns. I was not sparing of amorous expressions, shewing therein the height of zeal, by which means I deluded several. Some I was forced to give earnest to for their Goods, before they would trust me with what they had.

This course I followed till I was generally taken notice of for a grand deceiver. Having now gotten a round sum of money by me, I borrowed where ever

I could; so crossing St. Georges Channel, in twenty four hours I landed at *Chester*. I took up my quarters in very graceful Inne, and gave out immediately that I had an hundred head of Cattel coming. The Master of the house taking notice of my extraordinary Garb, and believing the report which I had caus'd to be spread abroad, ledg'd me with much respect in one of the best Chambers of his house.

The Wind favoured my design as much as I could desire, for it blew East-north-east, by which no shipping could come out of *Ireland*. One day I came to my Landlord, and telling him that by reason of the non-arrival of my Cattel, I was disappointed of moneys, and therefore I desired him to lend me ten pounds, and he should satisfy himself in the first choice of the best of my beasts when they came, and swore I would perform my promise to him upon the word of a Gentleman. So that without any scruple he lent me the Money. Being Market day, I bought an excellent Gelding with Furniture thereunto belonging, with Sword and Pistole, and in this Equipage mounted, I taking my leave of my credulous Landlord without speaking a word to him: I had not rid far, before three well mounted rid by me, (I found them afterwards to be the Vanguard) having as many more in the Rear. At the bottom of an *Hill* they before faced about, and bidding me stand, those in the Rear reinforce'd the Van. One of them clasp'd a Pistol at my breast, commanded me forthwith to deliver, swearing three or four full mouth'd Oaths. I saw it was now to little purpose to resist, although I was so well arm'd, and therefore endeavour'd a conquest some other way, viz. by smooth expressions. Gentlemen (said I) ye are all mistaken; neither do I greatly wonder thereat, since I verily believe ye are fresh men, men of a days standing in the

Rudy

Study of this noble Science, otherwise you might have distinguished me from an honest man; for I think in this Garb and posture, I look as suspiciously as any of ye; only I think I take a better course than ye to avoid apprehension, and reap to my self greater satisfaction. For ye rob in companies, and if any one be taken, his just fears frequently betray himself, but oftner the rest to destruction: whereas I robbing singly, I rob securely. Now Sirs freely examine my Pockets, where finding store of Coyn, they demanded how I came by it? I invented a lye to their general satisfaction; which was, I had met with a Boory a little before I met with them, which was the occasion of my being so well furnisht; but that which confirm'd them most, was my being so well provided with Pistols in my Holsters, Pockets and Boots. Instead of doing what they intended, they were then of another opinion, and all of them carest me in a very high manner; resolving to be merry at the next Inne, and there to admit me as a Brother.

Having set up their Horses, they went into a Room before, whil'st I stayd sometime after for the benefit of easing nature; coming in among them I thought my self mistaken in my company, and made a proffer to go out again; but they laughing heartily called me back. I knew not one Person, for they had pull'd off their false Beards, Vizards, Hoods, Patches, Wens, Mufflers and Perriwigs, together with those other disguises that obscured the natural proportion of their faces, so that they appear'd as other men. Come said the chief (as I guess him to be by the sway he bore over the rest) you are a freshman, and therefore want some of our instructions, which in due time you shall receive from us. In the first place it is fit you take an Oath which every young Thief must observe that is admitted into the Brother-hood, or at his investition into the

honour of one of the Knight of the Road: which was to this effect. First, they read a charge of secrecie, that whatever misfortune happened to cloud their freedom by rendring them as an object to Justice and the Law, they should conceal their Complices to the Death, or against any other jeopardy whatsoever, burying in oblivion not only his Confederates, but also his manner of entrance into this way.

And further, they proceeded to swear me, that if the Judges should press me to a discovery of particulars, that then I must cunningly create some men in my fancy, devising not only Names, but to give each man a particular feature, describing their stature, complexion and age, as also their dwelling place. Still provided that the place of their abode be far enough off: and then before enquiry be made, the danger of tryal may be over or past; and then again this pretended discovery may purchase favour from the Bench.

Further, if I should be examined, why, and how I fell into these courses, I must then tell them that I was born a Gentleman, and well educated; but being a younger brother, I had not wherewithal allowed me for a subsistence, and rather then I would live beneath my birth, or disparage the stock from whence I came (here fetching a deep sigh, and looking very sadly) necessity constraining me to supply my wants, I fell into these wicked courses; which will make them think you are some misled young man whom temptations had drawn aside, and so cause them to take pity of your condition; and if their mercy extend to the remission of your guilt, it shall not only rest you from the punishment of the Law, but from the prosecution of your past evils.

By this means we may have liberty to fall to  
our



our old courses; nor must conscience trouble us, but dispence with every impiety, and glory in the greatest iniquities, counting him most honourable who is grown the oldest and most exquisite experienced Practitioner of all manner of vice. Much more was committed to my memory for future observation, which for brevity sake I shall omit.

After I was sworn, and full bowls of Sack had trowled round, our grand Master-Thief, composing his countenance, and looking very gravely, come my new and young Knight of the Road, be ruled by me, whose long experience makes me able to command, and my love to you willing to instruct you. Ever lurk or lie in some by-place most advantageous and least suspicious which yields the eye the prospect of the Road: so strictly view the Booties, that other mens misfortunes may enrich your condition, and the honest maas loss be your gain; and be sure you draw every advantage that may promote your cause to the longest extent. For your Masks and Chin-cloath, thus must you place them and fit them as a monument to disguise your face, thereby to blind the intellects of such as by constraint pay tribute to your wants; who then can know and with considerate heed directly swear you are the man, when these artificial vizards are withdrawn, and so the visible tokens vanish that might inform mens knowledge what you are? and that your words may have a different sound, alter your voice, that so as your habit, face and hair, obscure your discovery, your speech (reputed undisguisable) will add to your concealment and security

Be sure you ingeniously contrive a Watch-word to your selves that may occasion no suspicion; as, we are like to have a fair day or a foul, according

as the weather is like to prove; which being nam'd, let every man fall to his work; those that are strongest at the grasp, and have hearts accordingly, let them seize first, alwayes duly observing this, to catch the Bridle by the left hand, and with the right draw your sword. If he or they resist, the one prevents his flight, the other cuts, and so cools his courage. The weaker sort's charge is to bid stand, and confronting the Horses head present a Pistol ready to discharge. If they deny delivering patiently what they have, but contend, you must wave all niceties, but cut them soundly; if that will not qualifie their foolish presumption, be sure you fire not without doing execution, and then with all speed fly, after you have with expedition taken the pillage of the field.

If you are pursu'd by an Hue and Cry, obscure your self in some place or other, and let it pass by you, and then to be sure it will never overtake you. If a prize comes by, or in your sight, if up the Hill, meet him; if down, follow close at the heels, and having more in company than your self, let each man single out his choice which he likes to deal with: the coast being clear, fall up all to your close order and side, be sure that you joyntly seize your prize. But here observe, let not any baseness of spirit unman you. For (*speaking to me*) nature hath bestow'd on you the full proportion of limbs, and thou seem'st a man of courage, suitable to the largeness of thy manly size, but be not surpriz'd with fear or cowardise if the assailed boldly assaults thee.

Fall fraught with the documents which I received from my old experienced Master, I resolv'd upon some atchievement: between two or three in the afternoon, I my self with four more set out, we plac'd our selves in a convenient place, only I was sent out

for a discoverer : not rightly understanding my trade, I wandered too far, but in my digression I met with a single person whom I bid stand, which he would have done, and as willingly have surrendered his purse, but that he was mounted on a stone-horse, I on a Mare. As soon as I had given the word, his stone-horse wheel'd off and came in the rear of me : I thinking he intended to crupper me, endeavour'd all wayes imaginable to prevent him, for there was something it seems under my Mares tail more powerful, which at that time I was not of. I led him round several times circularly, the poor harmless Gentleman fearing he should provoke me too much by delays, the unruliness of his Horse hindring my seizing the Booty, cryed out, worthy Sir, *take what I have and spare my life* : at that very instant his Horse reared his two fore-feet upon me and my Mare, in so much that I thought he said, I'll give thee both Life and Money too presently ; fear had then render'd me so incapable of performing the Office of a Thief. With that I put spurs to my Mare, and flew through the air for the procuration of my safety. Notwithstanding I made what speed I could, the other was close at my heels : striving and kicking with both my legs, one of my Pistols went off in my Pocket : the apprehension of the present danger had bereft me of the true use of my sense, for I immagined that my back-bow had discharged at me, which made me roar out for quarter. He on the contrary concluded I fought *Tartar-like* flying, and that I had fired it at him, which made him with much eagerness echo out with repetition this expression, *As you are a man, shew your self merciful*. Sometimes he would say, for heavens sake hold, good Sir stop ; which made me ride more furiously, thinking he called to the Country, hold him, stop him ; at last do what I could, his Stone-horse leaps

leapt up upon us, at that instant (by what means I know not) we all came headlong to the ground. I expected now that my imaginariy adversary would be upon me, and cut my throat before I could recover my legs, wherefore I started up, and found my mortal foe up before me, and upon the run. I could have hang'd my self to think I should be reckoned among the number of men, and yet want that spirit and courage which compleats a man : but loosing no time, I pursu'd him, and easily made my self possessor of what he had ; Sirrah, said I, if er'e I met thee again, and find thee so obstinate, or durst resist, as now thou hast done, I will tye thee to a Tree in some obscure place, where none can hear thy doleful cries, and there for six dayes thou shalt have no other food but what I shall bring thee. Once a day during that term I will visit thee, and each days meat shall be either a peice of thine own Sword broken into small bits, or those Ballers (which thou intendest for the destruction of honest men) dissolv'd, and mingled with Gun powder, which shall be convey'd to thy mouth through the muzz'le of thine own Pistol. It pleas'd me exceedingly to see how pittifully and submissively he look'd : for verily I durst not have utter'd half so much if he had shewn an austere countenance.

As I was framing a lye to delude my Comrades (when I should meet them) into a beleif how valiant I was, and dextrous in the prosecution of that design I had newly undertaken, I lookt about me and saw them all at my elbow. I now believed (which I easily perceiv'd by their flaring looks) that they were all eye-witnasses of my dangerous encounter. Oh brother, said one, how is't ? are you well ? I askt him the reason of his impertinent question ? Because, said he, we took notice of the great danger you were in even now, narrowly escap'd of being shot by a Pecker larkhorn.

Without

Without doubt, brother, you are very hard hearted to fly (riding full speed) at the very naming of, *good Sir be merciful*, the poor harmless soul making frequent repetition thereof, but you stopping your ears from all imprecations, his Stone-horse seem'd to be his advocate, and to that intent ran after your Mare, endeavouring to court her into an intercession for his Master.

I should never have stoppt their mouths had I not shew'd them what I had gotten, which was not inconsiderable.

It was twy-light as we met with another Prize, which was of a different temper from the former. For though he and his Fellow-traveller were (comparatively to any of us) but Pigmies, yet of so undaunted resolution and unresistable courage, that neither threats of death, or torture (I am confident) could dull the edges of their couragious spirits, which might be in part understood by their deportment to us: for had we not flasted, carbonadoed, and forceably bound them, rather then they would have yielded willingly, they would have stoopt to death. Our power having subdued them, we withdrew them into a secret place, leaving them not any thing valuable. Then did I learn to search with so strict care, that sooner might the grand Turk turn *Roman Catholick* then conceal a penny from me, here was I taught to be deaf when the poor Traveller cries he is undone; and to be more flinty then Adamant, not to be mov'd with sighs or tears. Having ingaged them by oath not to follow us by Hue and Cry, or by means of a general rising of the Towns adjacent; these two fellows robbed, rifled and amazed, we left wrapt up in woes, and hasted away to secure our selves,

I shall conclude this Chapter with a Relation how I was quit with my Comrades upon the account

count of fear or timorousness. Neither could they justly tax me with it, since they are things entail'd upon the profession. For every Crow that flies extracts a fear, and every thing that doth but stir, or make the bushes rustle, seem'd to our fearful fancy a Constable to apprehend us for our theft. I cannot forget how strong a confusion arose amongst us by a trifle; the means were so small; and the occasion so ridiculous, that when after I thought thereon (though by my self) I could not forbear laughing excessively, and condemn the temerity of such minds so meanly spirited. 'Twas thus in short, : An Owle who to gain shelter from the troubles of a Sunshine day, when all the airy tribe (wandering) flock to him, screen'd himself in the obscure retired residence of an hollow tree; no sooner had he cloister'd up himself, but between discontent and something of a pleasing satisfaction he first uttered his amazing screams, being in a slumber, and dreaming of the assaults were made at him by his feathered Enemies of all sorts, and then again awakeing, whoopt for joy that he was delivered from them; thus did he whoop and hollow incessantly, which infused such a terrour into our distrustful minds, that Whips, Switches and Spurs were all too few to expedite our haste.

For we absolutely thought those hollows were the out cries of the Country following us for what we had committed. We at length took Sanctuary in an Inn, where we had some interest and confidence in our security.

Understanding that our days work had been prosperous; our Host calls lustily for Sack, while the Drawer doubles in the Bar; the Hostler makes one of our Company too, and hail fellow with



us, who knowing what courses we take, presume we dare not cavil, lest they betray our practices: *Sic nos non nobis*. So we rob for them, and not for our selves, for by that time we have profusely frolickt (a Bill whereof shall be brought in of twice as much as we called for) and have bestowed our largesses to the Servants, and offered up our (expected) sacrifices to our Landlady, or her Draughter, for some private favour received, we finde our selves to have the least share, and so betake our selves to our trade till apprehension take from us that liberty, and the Law sentenceth us to pay our Lives as a just Debt we owe to Justice.

---

---

CHAP

## CHAP. XVII.

Scouring the Road, he lights on a Farmers house which he intended to rob, but desists from that resolution, falling in Love with his Daughter, who was exceeding beautiful; gets her with Gold, under the pretence of Marriage, but afterwards refusing it, She and her Parents tax him with the undoing of the young Woman; whereupon he leaveth them, giving them no other satisfaction then what they could gather out of a Copy of verses he sent them. From this Farmers house he rides he cared not whither, on the road he is strangely surprized by a Woman robber in Mann apparel; He discovers it by unbuttoning her Breaches to search for private pockets within. They conclude a perpetual Friendship. After Supper they enter into discourse, wherein she giveth him a short account of her life, and the cause of her undertaking such an extravagant and dangerous course; relating how notably she revenged her self on her Husband for his unworthy and base carriage towards her.

**R**iding along the Road, I met with a young Girl with a Milk pail on her head, but I was amaz'd to see such perfection in one mortal face. I rid up to her very near, purposely to entertain some discourse with her, introductory to a future acquaintance considering the ground, you may imagine the questions I propounded to this pretty Rural Innocent were frivolous enough; as, which with much respect and modest confidence she resolv'd. She opening a gate to milk her

Cows, I followed her, and tying my Horse to an hedge I beg'd her an excuse for being so rude and besecch't her charitable opinion of my present actions, assuring her I would not offer the least injury nor prejudice to her Chastity. Being over-perswaded with my protestations and vows to that purpose, she admitted me to sit down and discourse with her whilst she performed the office of a Milk Maid, I could hardly contain my self within bounds when I viewed her pretty little hand *stroking the Duggs*, which indeed had so heightened my amorous passion, that I soon forgot my Oaths and Promises, but after some distance, what by intreaties and love-perswasions, and what by Corporal strength, I obtained my desires. We then grew somewhat more familiar, but the burden of the Song was, *I had undone her*; let him that reads judge the truth thereof. We concluded at length that she should go home to her Fathers house, and that near night I would come thither likewise, according to the time appointed, as if I had never seen her before; and that I casually rid that way for information in the steering of my course regularly in the prosecution of my journey.

She subtilly goes in, and acquaints her Father and Mother that there was a Gentleman (without) whom by his Countenance, Garb, and Gesture shewed himself no less; that fearing to Travel farther, being night, knowing not the way, desired to rest himself there till morning. With much respects from her Parents to her own great satisfaction (which I discerned in her eyes) I was kindly entertained, and nobly treated. That night we intended to be better acquainted by the renovation of our late enjoyments; but our unlucky Starrs were impropitious to our amorous designs.



Next

Next morning I seem'd to be very ill, that I might have some pretence for my staying, which I acquainted the daughter withal, the old people were very loving and courteous, so that as soon as they heard thereof, with much pitty they visited me, and with as much care they provided what was necessary for me. I offered them money, shewing good store of Gold, that they might have the better esteem of me. Thus I lay at least a fortnight; several Doctors had been with me, but none knew my distemper. All this while I nightly had the society of my fresh Country Mistress, who deviated from the common customes of her Sex, did not coyishly refuse that which was the center of her hopes, wishes, and desires. Fearing least I might be suspected, I left off counterfeiting, and shew'd them some recovery of my strength. When at any time the good old people would come into my Chamber to sit with me, the main subject of my discourse would be the resentments of their favours, and that if I liv'd I would gratefully repay them. Being restor'd to my former healthful condition, I one day told them I could never recompence their love and care of me, but by marrying their Daughter, whom I told them I loved most affectionately. Her Parents made many excuses. As that she was but a poor Country Girl, and the like, but glad I perceived they were to hear such an over-prized motion. Enquiries I made in a Neighbouring Town what this Farmer was, whom I understood by all to be very wealthy, and that time was not more careful to furnish him with Silver hairs, then he industrious to maintain them by the procuration of a plentiful Estate: My wanton was his only Darling, for whom he furrowed the surface of the Earth, and for whom he chose rather to sell then to eat his better sort of provision, that he might add to her portion. It was now he thought he had

had well bestowed his labour, since he had met with such a blessed opportunity wherein he should add Gentility to his daughters riches. O the slaughter of Piggs, Geese, Capons, which as to some Idol were Sacrifices diurnally offered to procure my favour! and as he was liberal in his Food, so was not I sparing in the sending for Wine, six dozen of Bottles at a time: So that the old man was brought to this pass, that he cared not whether he spent his Estate on me, or gave it; and that young girl so well pleased with her imaginary Paradise here, that I am confident she would never have been induced to have exchanged this for any other on equal terms. Inexpressible was our satisfaction on all hands, but nothing gave them greater content then to see us together, by which we had as many opportunities as we listed. My main aim was still to know of my young Mistress what store of coyn her Father had, and where it lay, but to my great grief and vexation she told me he had not five pound within doors, having lately bought a purchase. I now thought it was to little purpose to stay longer, since I could not glean from her Fathers harvest, though I had reapt the crop of her Mothers labour, and so resolved to be going, but not without one nights solemn leave taking of her. The night being come, she purposely stayed up till all the rest were gone to bed. But we being too imprudently hasty in the Kitchen, stumbled against two Barrels piled one on the other, and fell; and we both were so entangled, that we could not disengage our selves so soon, but that her Father came out crying, *In the name of goodness what is the matter?* and groping about caught me by the naked breech. Seeing there was no remedy, I desired him to be silent; and not spread his Daughters disgrace; if so, I would make her shortly a recompence. The old man was very much perplext,

and could not forbear telling his Wife of what had past. They both cryed out that their Daughter was undone: the Daughter was in the same tone, unless I would speedily marry her.

I stayd afterwards about some three dayes to colour the matter, and at last marcht off *incognito*, sending her twenty peices of Gold, and a Coppy of Verses, which, as too plain and pertinent to the sweet Treatment had past between us, we shall at present here omit.

Abruptly taking my leave of the Farmer, and his loving Daughter, I rid a long time, but met with none worthy of my taking Cognizance: being wearied, I struck into an Inn, and by that time I had thoroughly refreshed my self, the evening began to approach. Whereupon I mounted, and so put on, passing by a small Coppice in a bottom between two Hills, a Gentleman (as I then supposed) well armed, and handsomely accoutred, started out upon me, and bid me deliver instantly. Hearing him say so, I told him if he would have but the patience I would; and with that drew out a Pocket-Pistol and fired it at him, without doing any execution. If you are for a little sport (said the Gentleman) I shall shew you some instantly; whereupon drawing a Pistol he shot me into the leg: having so done, with his Sword (which hung ready at his wrist) neatly at a blow he cut the reins of my Bridle, so that I was not able to guide my horse. But he being good at command, and used to the charge, with the winding of my body I gave him to understand what he was to do, come Sir, said my adversary, have you enough yet? in faith Sir, said I, I'll exchange but one Pistol more, and if that prove insuccessful I shall submit to your mercy. Whereupon I shot, but missed my mark, however I killed his Horse, wch instantly fell: my gentleman was so nimble that



that before I could think what to do, he had sheathed his sword in my ~~four~~ belly, which made me come rumbling down too with a *Horse pox*. Once more, said my antagonist, we are upon equal terms, and since the obscurity of the place gives us freedom, let us try our courages, one must fall. And thereupon with his sword (which was for cut and thrust) he made a full pass at my body; but putting it by I closed in with him, and upon the Hug threw him with much facility: I wondered much at it; which I need not have done, since his nature (as afterwards I understood) was so prone to it. Having him down, now, Sir, said I, I shall teach you to be careful on whom you set: you have as imprudently undertaken this enterprize as a *Pickeroom* did once, who seeing a man of war high built, and but few men aboard her discoverable, her Port-holes being likewise fast, clapt her aboard immediately, thinking she had been a Merchant man; but they found the contrary, the deck being instantly filled with men that were below, and running on her Guns there could be no wisdom in resistance. Wherefore now Sir yield, or I shall compel you, with much reluctancy he did, with cords I had ready for that purpose, I tyed both his hands and feet, and so fell to rasing him. Unbuttoning his Doublet to finde whether there was no Gold quilted there in, I wondered to see a pair of breasts so unexpectedly greater and whiter then any mans; but being intent about my business, that amizement vanished from my thoughts. Then did I come to his breeches (which I laid open) my curious search omitted not any place wherein I might suspect the concealment of moneyes: at last proffering to remove his shirt from between his legs, he suddenly cryed out (and strove to lay his hand there, but could not) I beseech you Sir be civil, said he: I ima-

ginning that some notable *Treasure* lay there obscured, I pulled up his shirt (*alias* Smock) and found my self not much mistaken.

The sight so surprized me, as if I had been converted into a Statue by the head of a *Gorgon*; but after a little pause, I haistily unbound her, and taking her in my Arms, pardon me most courageous *Amazon*, (said I) for thus rudely dealing with you, it was nothing but ignorance that caused this error for could my dim-lighted soul have distinguished what you were, the greatness of love and respect I bear your Sex would have deterred me from contending with you. But I esteem this my ignorance, my greatest happiness, since knowledg in this case would have deprived me of the benefit of knowing there could be so much Prowess in a Woman. For your sake I shall ever retain a very good esteem of the world of Females. She beg'd me not to be too tedious in my expressions, nor pump for eloquent phrases, alledging this was no proper place to make Orations in. But if you will enlarge your self, let us go into a place not far distant from this, better known, but to few besides my self. I liked her advice very well, and returning what I had taken from her, I followed it, by following her through divers obscure passages till we came to a wood, where in a place the Sun had not seen since the first deluge, stood an house. At our first approach the Servants were all in a hurry, who should first obey Mrs. *Pirago's* commands, for they all knew her, being no way estranged to her disguise, but wondered to see *St. George* and his trusty Esquire on foot, neither durst they show themselves inquisitive presently: with much respect we were conducted into a very stately room, where embracing each other, we knit an indissolvable tie of friendship.

Having

Having refresh'd our selves with what the House afforded, and Bottles and Pipes had supplied the place of dishes; we dialogu'd as familiarly, as if our acquaintance had bore equal date with our Nativities. And now it was she laid her self open to me, not concealing any thing, having before made my self acquainted with her greatest secret. Frankly she called for Bottles of Wine, which we smartly drank together out of Beer-glasses: had not Supper been speedily provided, which required a cessation for some time, I should not have been in a condition to discern the Dish, nor him that brought it to the Table. Having taken some repast, I began to be refresh'd, she not in the least disturbed all this while.

I prest her to tell me what she was, and what manner of life she led. Sir, said she, I cannot deny your request; wherefore to satisfy you, know that I was the Daughter of a Sword-Cutler. In my younger day's my Mother would have taught me to handle a Needle, but my Martial Spirit gain-said all persuasions to that purpose. I could never endure to be among the Utensils of the Kitchen, but spent most of my time in my Fathers Shop, taking wonderful delight in handling those Warlike Instruments: to take a Sword in my hand well mounted and brandish it, was reckoned by me among the cheif of my recreations. Being about a dozen years of age, I studyed all wayes imaginable how I might make my self acquainted with a Fencing-Master. Time brought my desires to their complement, for such a one as I wisht for, casually came into our Shop to have his blade furbisht; and Fortune so ordered it, there was none to answer but my self. Having given him that satisfaction he desired, though not expecting it from me: Amongst other talk I demanded of him whether he was not a Professor of the Noble

Science? (for I guesst to much by his Postures, Looks, and Expressions.) He told me he was a well-willer thereunto. Being glad of this opportunity, desiring him to conceal my intentions, I requested him the favour as to give me some instructions how I should manage a sword: at first he seemed amazed at my proposal, but perceiving I was in earnest, he granted my petition, allotting me such a time to come to him as was most convenient. I became so expert at Back-sword and Single Rapier in a short time, that I needed not his assistance any longer: my Parents not in the least mistrusting any such thing.

I shall wave what exploits I did by the help of a disguise, and only tell you that when I arrived to fifteen years of age, an Inn keeper married me, and carried me into the Country. For two years we lived very peaceably and comfortably together, but at length the insolent and imperious temper of my Husband made me begin to show my natural humour. Once a week we seldom missed of a combat between us, which frequently proved so sharp, that it was well if my Husband came off with a single broken pate; by which means the gaping wounds of our discontents and differences being not presently salved up, they became in a manner incurable. I never was much inclined to love him, because he was of a mean dastardly spirit, and ever hated that a Darghil-Cock should tread a Hen of the Game. Being stinced like-wise of Money; my life grew altogether comfortless, and I look't on my condition as insupportable: wherefore as the only remedy or expedient to mitigate my vexatious troubles, I contrived a way how I might sometimes take a purse. I judged this resolution safe enough, if I were not taken in the very fact) for who could suspect me to be a Robber, wearing abroad upon such designs mans Apparel, but at home only that

that which was suitable and agreeable to my own sex? besides, none could have better encouragement and conveniency than my self; for, keeping an Inn, who is more proper to have in custody what charge my Guests brought into my house than my self? or if committed to my Husbands tutelage, I could not fail to inform my self of the richness of the Booty. Moreover, the Hostess is the Person whose company is most desired, before whom they are no way scrupulous to relate which way they are going, and frequently what the affair was that led them that way.

Courage I knew I wanted not, (be you my impartial Judge, Sir) what then could hinder me from being successful in such an enterprize? Being thus resolved, I soon procured necessary Habillimens for these my contrivances, and never miscarried in any of them till now. Instead of going to Market, or riding five or six miles about such a business, (the usual pretences with which I blended my Husband) I would when out of sight ride a contrary road to this house (wherein we now are) and here Metamorphose my self, and being fixed at all points; Pad uncontrollably, coming off alwayes Victoriously. Not long since my Husband had about one Hundred pounds due to him about some twenty miles from his habitation, and designed such a day for its reception: Glad I was to hear of this, resolving now to be revenged of him for all those injuries and churlish outrages he had committed against me: I knew very well which way he went, and knew the time of his coming home; whereupon I way laid him at his return. And happily as I would have it, he did not make me wait above three hours for him. I let him pass me, knowing that by the swiftness of my Horse I could easily overtake him, and so I did, riding with

with him a mile or two before I could do my intended business: At last (looking about me) I saw the coast clear on every side; wherefore riding up close to him, and laying hold on his Bridle, I clapt a Pistol to his Breast, commanding him to deliver, or he was a dead man. My imperious Don seeing death before his face, had like to have sav'd me the labour by dying voluntarily without compulsion, and so amaz'd at his sudden surprizal, that he look'd like an Apparition, or one lately risen from the dead. Sirrha (said I) be quick, but a dead Palsie had so seized every part of him, that his eyes were incapable of directing his hands to his pocket. But I soon recalled his lost spirits by two or three smart blows with the flat of my Sword, which so awakened him out of that deep Lethargy he was in, that with much submissiveness he delivered me his moneys. After I had dismounted him, and cut the Reins of his Bridle and Girths, I basted him soundly, till that I had made jelly of his bones, and that his flesh look'd like Egyptian Mummy. Now you Rogue (said I) I am even with you: have a care the next time how you strike a Woman (your Wife I mean) for none but such as dare not fight a man, will lift up his hand against a weaker vessel. Now you see what it is to provoke them; for if irritated too much, they are restless till they have accomplish'd their satisfactory revenge: I have a good minde to end thy wicked courses with thy life, but that I am loath to be hang'd for nothing, such a worthless man. Farewel; this money shall serve me to purchase Wine to drink healths to the confusion of such rascally and mean spirited things. And so I left him.

She was about to have proceeded in such agreeable relations of her rencounters, when word was brought her up, two Gentlemen below desired to speak with her



craving my excuse, she went down, and in a little time returned with them: she made an apology to me for so doing, adding that if she had committed a crime against my future knowledge of those Persons would exonerate it. By their effeminate countenances I could be misled of judging rightly what they were, viz. Females. After several discourses we grew so familiar, that the longest continued friendship could not boast of more freedom.

Having talkt and drank our selves weary, we concluded to lye all in one chamber, there being two beds: for our Nocturnal passages were, I'll give the Reader leave to imagine.

---

CHAP. XVIII.

relates (modestly) what satisfaction he received from his new Female acquaintance, and what occasioned the late income Amazons to attempt the hazardous enterprises of the High-Pad: with their Character and course of Life. How he with his new Female travelling comrade contrived notable subtil and safe ways to rob together; with a relation of some remarkable stories which were the effects of those consultations.

Though melancholly night had drawn her sable curtains about our Hemisphere, yet the covered Curtains of Opticks was not yet laid down to admit our senses to their usual rest and repose: obscured darkness had every where proclaimed silence about us

on a penalty of distracted incompofedness; yet feared not the breach of those binding Laws, breaking our minds to each other interchangeably. My conquered foe (now my new friend) first began to relate to her old associates the rise of our late encounter and the success, which she exprest with so much candour and ingenuity, that they knew not which to value most, her wit, or my courage; but when she came to relate, the manner of the discovery of her sex, so plentiful and facetious was her discourse, that it occasioned a great deal of laughter and mirth among us. Moving thoroughly discourt varieties, for further diversion one of these late Incommers undertook to give us a summary of her Comerades (or Sisters) being there with intermixt, now I must give her leave to tell her own tale.

Sir, (for to you I apply my discourse particularly being wholly ignorant of what these two inseparable Companions or mine well understand) I shall not trouble your ear with any thing but what is absolutely necessary: laying aside therefore superfluous Preambles let me tell you I was the eldest Daughter of a Virtuoso in London, a man lookt on so wealthy, that he was elected upon for Alderman, having no more children than son, my self, and this my dear sister my metamorphosized follower. My Brother I think was begot out of degenerate wine, and that made him so degenerate for virtue and a good spirit; a hot fiery fellow, always on the trot, till his cask or caskcase was peirc'd; and so leave him as I found, him an empty Hogthead.

This obstacle being removed (the remora to our promising fortune) none were more extoid and courted for wealth and beauty (rarely seen together) than my sister and self; men of all sizes, both of wit, estate, stature, daily frequented my Fathers house, pretending

they came for the goodness of wine there vend'd; till they had got an interest in our acquaintance, and then they unmaskt their meaning, several overtures were made to our Parents, who like good domestick Politicians, seemed to like, to encourage them to continue coming for their expence sake: frequently they bespeak dinners, vying who should exceed in prodigality, thinking thereby to gain esteem, while the old Fox did but laugh at them in private for their pains. My Mother and her trade at her fingers ends for when she would oblige any of them to any treaty, it was but calling him Son, or Sirrah you are a wag, my Benjamin must have the largest Portion, &c. By this means she chain'd them to the house, and to engage them the more. I permitted us to bear them company; but fearing lest we might glut our Idolators by too long staying (for we sooner surfeit on delicates then courser fair) our Mother would call us, pretending present business, and would then supply the place her self; then would they charge afresh, till they had blinded one another. I must needs say, my mothers company was deservedly desirable: for though she had past her ages *Æquinox*, yet her beauty appeared but very little declining, in her youthful dayes she was the wonder of her Sex and was so generally talkt of among beauty-hunters, that our Tavern was never empty, and happy was he that could procure the drinking of a glass with her at the Bar, but transported, if they could obtain the favour to have her company in a room which for profit sometimes permitted, and something else, which my Father winked at gladly, because he could not make the like expedient to enrich himself. She was finely, tall and of a beauteous blushing brown; her hair proper to her complexion, neatly put into curls

curls and folds by Nature: Her face was made up of excellent parts; as a quick eye and full; her circled brows graceful and big; her nose not over Roman, with a full mouth; the largeness of the lips commendable, because plump and red; her dimpled chin (which Nature had drawn, with a wanton touch of her Pencil) did singularly set out her looks most comely. Her neck was round, rising, full and fat: her body well fed, not fat; an Italian Don's delight. When any Gentlemen came in, me thinks I now see how she leared out of her jouncing Italianated eyes, able to confound a Saint. In short, her hair was enough to inchant you into those mazes, but that her looks were so neer, which hooked yours into her eyeballs, full, black and rowling; and when she had you, she held you there. Neither was she a niggard of those gifts were so liberally bestowed on her, but communicated a taste thereof to divers; for as she was naturally prone to whorishness, so she gave her inclinations the reins, and at last became so impudent, that she did that frequently in our sights, which though we understood not, being too young, yet forcibly drew a blush into our tender cheeks. Being in her prime, she gave her self so much liberty, that she was a shame to her Sex; there was not any vice that was attended either by pleasure or profit, but she would be sharer therein. And now being gulled with shadows and impostures, she drew up the Portcullis of her heart, and laid the gates thereof wide open to her own ruine. Who would imagine, that a pleasing countenance could harbour villany, or that a smile could set upon the face of mischief? But therein she shewed her self a *Cortezin* of the right stamp, that for her own advantage can entertain mans appetite with wanton dalliance, but will never make assurance of settled love. When men think themselves most interested in her, then was

is frequently that they were farthest from her. I am somewhat the longer in my Mothers Character, that I might the fuller demonstrate what was the original that I so exactly copied in the actions of my own life. Did Parents consider how prevalent their wicked examples are with their issue, they would be less curious to cleanse their houses of dirt and dust against the coming of their friends, and more careful not to see them hung with vices in the presence of their children. You see I know the difference between good and evil, because I talk so well, though I act so ill. But to proceed how is it possible the Daughter should be chaste, that cannot reckon up the adulteries of her Mother, though she be never so well in breath, without a dozen stops or intermissions at the least? Such as are conscious to these faults in others, cannot but be capable of them in themselves. The hearing of them told begets a willingness to try them: the seeing of them done, a wilfulness to do them. She presumed I believe upon our indiscretions as Children, perswading her self we had not wit enough to discern it. But alas! she erred in her Cyphers, and was much mistaken in her accounts: for we coming to years, did not stick to that in her sight, which she before would not forbear in ours. And with what face could she reprove us?

*The crooked wretch must not upbraid the lame  
Nor must the Moor the sawny Indian blame.*

Her house did daily swarm with such as pretended more than common kindness to me. Several my Parents approved off as wealthy, and propounded them to me whom I only disliked for want of comeliness. One I confess I could have fancied highly for his wit, had his formation been so extravagant and preposterous

rous. O the innumerable quantity of Poetick brats which *Pallas* like sprang out of his head, and so pestered my Chamber, that I could hardly sleep for the trampling of their feet: some whereof appear'd so fair to me from a Father so foul, that I have carried them in my bosome to converse with them among the solitary shades. I protest civility could scarce keep me from laughing outright every time I saw him, his whole composure appear'd to me so ridiculous. For first his head seem'd to sink down into his Breast, his eyes staring affrighted at the danger, whilst his mouth continually gaped, as if it intended to cry out for help: his back and breast bunched out, as if a wallet stuffed at both ends had hung over his shoulder behind and before. Though extravagant enough, you could not say he shewed much waste. Had you seen him on a rainy day, by the length of his leggs (yet of dwarfish stature) you would have thought him mounted on stilts, and wading through the dirt with a boy at his back. Now let me skip over his Person, and only tell you how I served him, and then I have done with him. That day I saw him not, I had his representation sent me, which was good diversion, but his presence was insupportable: to the intent therefore that I might be rid of him, I sent him these lines.

SIR,

*You are the Son of Æiop, for I find  
Legitimation by your shape and mind;  
Deform'd ye are alike, thence 't is thought fit  
That such defects should be supply'd by wit.  
Your aspects monstrous foul, yet don't complain,  
Your issues fair, the product of your brain.*



But say, I must recal my self, for know  
 My praises are like to your self too low :  
 Truth when I view you well, my fancy must  
 Imagine you much like a Capon trust,  
 Or like Sir Hudibras, nick nam'd All-feather,  
 Or like one ty'd both neck and beels together :  
 Nor do not think Pygmean Sir that I  
 Will fall in love with meer deformity ;  
 Then court some Succubus, a fiend will be  
 A fitter match : so think no more on me.

These lines so nettled him, that having belcht out  
 some execrations against me and our sex, I never heard  
 more of him. To be short: there was none could get  
 any interest in me, but our Head drawer, a neat flaxen-  
 hair'd fellow ; so passionately we loved one the other,  
 that we could not forbear holding some private cor-  
 respondence at nights. My father at length suspecting  
 us, turned away his man, whose absence I could not  
 brook, and therefore resolv'd to follow after, which I  
 did, taking with me what ready money my father had  
 in his custody ; and finding out my dear Comrade, this  
 was the result of our consultation, that I should cloath  
 my self like a man, and so travel together. It will be  
 too tedious to relate how and whether we went ; but  
 let it suffice to tell you, that after we had run through  
 France and Italy, and wearied our selves in forraign  
 parts we concluded to return for England.

We landed at Dover, having made an end of our  
 Voyage and Money together, having so much as  
 would purchase Horse and Arms ; for Padding was  
 the way we agreed on to recruit our decayed stock.  
 Many were the Robberies we committed, taking  
 such a course that the Devil could hardly detect us :  
 for sometimes when we had robbed, and fearing

lest we should be taken by the Hue and Cry, it was but turning my horse loose, and then would I put on womens apparel (which I alwayes carryed in my Portemante in such expeditions) and getting up behind my friend, I past unexpected as his wife. This stratagem frequently proved a safeguard to us both. By this means we several times robbed houses, under pretence of my friends taking lodgings for himself and wife. To tell you in what manner and how often we played our pranks under a double disguise, would take up more time then is convenient. Wherefore I shall now wind up my story: My Comrade in an unhappy enterprise received a shot in his shoulder, which proved mortal for not long after he dyed; being then destitute of my dear companion, I had several thoughts of returning home, but that I liked my trade so well, I could not be induced to leave it. However, I went to my Fathers house frequently with roaring Blades; but they knew me not, though sometimes they would stare upon me as if there eyes would have started out of their heads for joy to see their old acquaintance. At last I took a convenient opportunity under the veil of courtship to discover my self to my Sister (here present) who understanding my course of life, & knowing wel her own constitution, for my sake resolved to hazard all, & run on risque with me. Having instructed her how she might rob her father, as I had done before her, we met at a place appoinred, and so took our journey higherward. Now if our conversation may be any wayes pleasing and our service advantagious, we are both your devoted servants. She uttered these words with such a grace that I could not forbear imbracing her. After we had plighted faiths, and mutually caressed each other, we betook our selves to rest, which you may imagine was little enough.

Angry I was when I perceived the appearance of day, which I knew would unavoidably rob me of my present delight and pleasure. But it was only my fear of being deprived of so much bliss made me so grossely to mistake, for I quickly found my happiness enlarged by the approaching light, my sense of *seeing* being now made copartner with that of *feeling*. Love had now his eyes restored him, who before only groped for the naked truth in the dark. Now did we begin afresh to renew our late sweet nocturnal pastime; our boundless desires, our bed would have been the sole concern we should have minded, till that time which must put a period to this transitory life.

But to avoid the censure of sluggishness, we all resolved to rise, and unanimously strive and contend who should make the best proof of the greatest ingenuity in contriving what may give the largest satisfaction both to mind and body. As a *praludium* to our intended purpose, and a restorative to our decayed strengths; we first resolved upon buttered Sack, with other things of like comforting natures: and now finding our selves by this first essay so much beyond expectation revived and fitted for mirth and pleasure, we straight gave order for a Dinner to be speedily prepared, whose composition should be of the choicest viands. And that the time might not seem tedious in the interim, it was put to the vote what pastime we should make choice of for diversion. Some were for bodily exercise, but I was clearly against that, having so lately tired my self with it: besides my lameness, which was occasioned by the shot I received in my legg from my Valiant Rencountress. It was at length agreed on by all, that we should entertain our selves with Musick and Discourse. A match (said the eldest Sister) and to the intent you may see my freedom and forwardness to propegate

Your proposition, I shall give my assistance first to heighten your spirits by vocal and instrumental Musick: having thus broken the Ice, I question not but you will prove ready followers, and swim with me in the same streams of delight, Whereupon she took up a Lute and having praised that instrument above all other for its sweet ravishing harmony, I will now try (said she) how my voice will agree with it, and thus sang:

*What need we to care?*

*VV have enough and to spare,*

*What we gain we will drink and spend on't;*

*But when all is gone,*

*VVe will get more anon,*

*Then make it all fly, there's an end on't.*

*We will rob, we will steal*

*For our own Common-weal.*

*Let the Miser be damn'd with his treasure:*

*Our designs we will shape*

*For the juice of the grape,*

*Thus spin out our lives in our pleasure.*

*We think it more fit*

*To live by our wit,*

*And hazard our lives on adventure;*

*We are the sons of the blade*

*Never bred to a trade,*

*We scorn'd to be bound by Indenture.*

Not for flattery, but due merit, we could give her no less than applause: which though that word may savour of some thing of a complement, yet I will assure you there was no such thing past between us; we knew how to improve our time to a far greater advantage, leaving

leaving such empty vain expressions to such, who have little else to do then to play with a Ladies Fan, or to consume their times in combing their Perriwigs, not only in the Streets and Play-houses, but even (irreverently) in the holy places of Divine worship.

The pertinency of this Song to the practice of our lives, did as much please us all, as the harmony of that voice did ravish our delighted ears. And lest our satisfaction should any wayes cool or abate, more Musical fewel was laid on, to warm our benum'd spirits. if any such unlikely thing should happen. Whereupon her Sister (not making use of any instrument to assist her voice, being sensible it was natural) frankly, and with a becoming freedom, sang to this purpose.

'Tis liberty which we adore,

It is our wealth and only store;

Having her we all are free,

Who so merry then as we?

'Tis she that makes us now to sing,

And only she can pleasure bring

Chorus.

Since we then such freedom have,

We'll purchase pleasure or a grave;

'Tis better so then live a slave.

As I am free, so will be still.

For no man shall abridge my will:

I'll pass my life in choicest pleasure,

On various objects spend my treasure:

That woman sure no joy can find,

Who to one man's only joyn'd.

Chorus.

Since we then such freedom have,

We'll purchase pleasure or a grave:

'Tis better so, then live a slave.

What pleasure is in full cram'd baggs?  
 No more then is in Beggars rags:  
 Unless made use of, what is Cash?  
 A fine new nothing, glittering trash:  
 Being well employ'd, it is a thing  
 Which doth delight and honour bring.

Chorus.

Since we then such freedom have,  
 Wee'l purchase money or a grave:  
 'Tis better so, then live a slave.

About to have proceeded in this manner round, we were interrupted by Dinner coming up, which came as seasonable as our stomachs could require. Waving all Ceremonies, we instantly fell to it without the tediousness of long winded graces; neither were we long at it, our hands and appetites being alike nimble and quick to give the body its required satisfaction.

After dinner we had various discourses about the vanity and imbecillity of the female sex: winding up our argument, one said, She would not be a meer woman for the whole universion, and wondred that man, so noble and rational a Soul, should so unman himself in his voluntary enslaving himself to a womans will: I wonder how they dare boast of conquests, when they must acknowledge they are daily overcome by a weak and feeble creature, woman, a thing which for want of heat sunk into that Sex.

With such like prattle we entertained our selves for an hour or two; and now it was put to the vote what course we should steer, and what design we should next put in execution. Different were our opinions for a while, but at last we concluded unanimously about the evening to set out and rob joyntly: the manner

which



which we laid down was thus: the youngest Sister on a Pillion in her own proper apparel, and my *Virago* behind me in the like female Garb; and this we adjudged to be the safest project we could propound: for who could be so senseless to imagine us Robbers, riding in that manner double horled, and attended with the greatest symptoms of innocency.

Hereupon we presently fell to work, that is to say, endeavoured to get such necessities as were most convenient for our enterprise, as Pillions, Safe-guards and short swords for my females: Pocket Pistols they had already. Having gotten what womens attire we wanted, and all things ready, we mounted with boots, which we dirted on purpose, to the intent those which saw us might not suspect but that we had rid many miles that day. It was about six of the clock in the evening when we did set forth; we had not rid above two hours, but there overtook us four horsemen, and demanded whither we were travelling? I answered them to such a place. Now did our two subtil Queens which rid behind us play their parts to the life, pretending a great fear of being rob'd, and carryed their business so craftily, that they gave the Gentlemen to understand their pretended fear and jealousy: and the better to cloak our design, pray thee my Dear (said I) in a voice not over loud, but just so that they might hear me, do not be afraid, I am confident they are no other then what they appear, that is, honest civil persons.

Hereupon, one of the Gentlemen over-hearing, rode up close to me, and comforted my supposed wife behind, protesting they were no such persons as she imagined; that they were Gentlemen of good estates all, and so far they were from offending any, that they would with the hazard of their lives defend the injured

red on the road : we seemed hereat to be much satisfied, returning them many thanks, and desiring their company. which they kindly granted, saying, come follow, wee'l lead the way gently on, and stand between you and danger. I was glad to hear them say they would ride before, for now I judged our business to be facile and easily done. I now whispered behind me, telling her, as soon as ever she saw me give a blow, she should immediately leap off the horse, and make use of what weapons she had : Her sister had the like instructions given her.

My Brother, as I called him, riding up close with me, received directions from me, that when he came to the bottom of the hill, he should at the same time with me directly discharge his Truncheon on the head of his fore-goer, with all the force he could sum up together.

When they least suspected us in the rear, we executed what we designed with such exact time, and so successfully, that a divided minute did not difference their fall. Our women were as swift as lightning upon them, depriving them of all the advantages of rising, whilst we set spurs to our horses, and over took the other two afore, who insensible of what was done, were strangely surprized and amazed, to see our swords and Pistols ready to dispatch our hellish commands. Fear on a suddain had so chained up their tongues, as that they could not utter a word, till we forced them to it by threatening their unavoidable deaths if they did not instantly deliver. Being willing to ransom their lives by their moneys, they gave us what they had, as not to stand in competition with a matter of eternal concern. Having reaped our desires, we dismounted them, and cutting their girths and bridles, we took their peices with the saddles, and threw them into an obscure place.

The

The horses were whipt over into a field. Our Prisoners we led into a little wood, where we bound them as the rest of our Gang did, who were more expeditious than we in their work. Having finish'd our business to our hearts content and security, we mounted, and so rid back to our old quarters. Our Landlord wondered at our speedy dispatchs but had like to have expired for joy, when he saw our booty was so considerable; for you are to understand he had a quarter share with us. Here did we carouse and feast for a long time, not so much as shinking on any prize: and the truth on't is, my leg grew so bad by my shot, that I could not ride but in great pain. Wherefore I resolv'd to lye still till its cure should be effected by my loving and skilful Landlady. My wound being healed, I resolv'd to follow my custom, and rob alone, not so much that my profit would be greater, but I began to be tyred with my three former dainties; nay more, they were so insatiate in those pleasures they enjoyed, that my strength could not cope with such excesses. Wherefore pretending business of privacy a little way off, I gave them the slip, knowing how difficult it would be to part with them knowingly.

---

## CHAP. XIX.

Being now upon the Pad alone, he baits at an Inn with which he was acquainted, and thereby the Hostler is informed of a booty, which he pursued, but was soundly banged for his pains, losing both his horse, and what small matter he had left. He here reneweth his acquaintance with a cunning fellow, that formerly studied the Law, and since made it his whole business to practice the abuse thereof. The life of a Law abusing Cheat. What a notable revengeful trick he serv'd the Turnkey of Ludgate.

**V**ERY loath I was to part with these *Amazons*, notwithstanding I saw there was an unavoidable and absolute necessity for it. For no man could ever better be pleas'd with society, then I was in theirs, enjoying such persons whose courage and fidelity might vie with the most approved male friend, and reaping at the same time the choicest favours *Venus* can confer on her cheifest Favourites.

One remarkable passage concerning this Female Robber, I had like to have forgot; which was this: She would frequently Pad or rob on foot in Womens apparel, but so disguised, that she could not easily be known: getting a Cushion or some such thing, (by putting it under her Cloaths to make her seem big with Child) she would usually walk abroad, it may be three or four miles at length, near some beaten road. Thus had she the benefit of viewing all that rid by. If she saw any single person by whose equipage she might imagine

Imagine him to have his pockets well furnished, before she came near her, she used to feign her self both exceeding sick and weary, groaning in a most pitiful manner. What mans hart could be so obdurate as to pass her by neglected, and without taking notice of her? Who would not proffer a big-bellied woman (tired and indisposed) the courtesie of riding behind him for a while way to refresh her? as she told me, she met with very few that did not take her up behind them, seeing her in that deplorable condition. Having rid a pretty way, seeing the coast clear, and coming to a convenient place for to execute her design, she would pretend the Gentlemans hat that rid before her, offended her eyes; most incivility would put it off, though they immediately put it on again: then would she with a word with a nooze, which she had ready for the purpose, clap it over his head, and so whipping off the horse pull the man after her; oftentimes half strugling him, serving him as the *Mutes* do the *Bassa's* with their black box and silk string therein, when they are designed for death by the *Grand Seniors* appointment and command. Taking the advantage of their being half suffocated, she could easily first bind their legs, making them so secure, that they were so far from resisting that they were totally at her devotion.

But to return where I left off: before I took my leave of her, perceiving the temper of this brave noble Spirit, and that it was Poetically inclined, out of my true resentment of her due merit, I gave her these lines, which she thankfully received, though modestly shyned to concern her in the least.

Stand back ye Muses, Mars, come guide my Pen,  
I rank this Female Heroe 'mongst thy Men.

So, so 'tis well. Now let us to the matter,  
 'Tis such a subject that I cannot flatter.  
 The Pantalooners, strut, and Mufftoons;  
 Taking great pains for to appear Buffoones.  
 They do seem men and like 'em wear their Swords,  
 But cannot draw; such may be kill'd with words;  
 These love a Lady and affect pe fumes,  
 (Who might be as then what they wear) their Plumes.  
 Thou scornst such shaddows, or Chimæra's, which  
 Are good for nothing but a womans itch.  
 Thou lov'st that man alone that dares in spight  
 Of face scorn Death himself in fight.  
 Thy actions speak thee man who dares deny it?  
 Believe this truth, or if you dare, then try it;  
 'Twill be a favour to her for they'll find,  
 That never man enjoy'd so brave a mind.

Bidding this my *Minerva* and her associates adieu, I rid on in the next Road, without meeting any I thought requisite to fasten on. At length I came to an Inn, where I was very well acquainted, and intended there to have refresht my self; but the Hostler prevented it, not suffering me to alight, telling me hastily, that there was a Gentleman not an hour since baited there, who had in his Portmanteau a considerable purchase; that he was a poor spirited fellow, whom he knew, and that he ever had an absolute antipathy against a naked Sword, and that he he was gone such a road, &c.

I stay'd not so long as to drink, but with all possible expedition made after him; ascending a small Hill, I discovered him, who rid an ordinary pace, wherefor I slackt mine to cool my horse; however I soon overtook him, and rode by him, not without viewing him well; riding down the Hill I did alight purposely



purposely that he might over-take me which he did ;  
being past I mounted, and at the very bottom I bid  
him stand and deliver instantly, or he was a dead man.  
Sis, sis, sis, ( said he lisping very much ) l-l-l I am going  
home. I bid him not make these proposed delays,  
lest he smarted, and therefore wisht him to dispatch  
and give me his money, for I was informed ( I told  
him ) that he had a sum behind him. T-t-t-'tis true  
( he reply'd ) b b-but it is my Fathers m-m-money,  
Hang your Father and his fluttering Coxcomb too,  
( said I ) I must have what you have. W-wh-why then  
you shall, ( said he ) and with that drew out a Pocket-  
pistol and fired it at me, which made my horse start, and  
very much surprizing me, expecting not the least resist-  
ance from such a seemingly ignorant and cowardly fel-  
low ; by that means he had time and liberty to draw his  
sword ( which was almost as broad as a chopping knife )  
and came upon me so furiously, that I am sure I had  
not time to defend my self : he so laid about him, that I  
soon lay at his mercy. I was forced to beg very hard for  
my life, which I obtained with very much ado : then he  
drew all to my pockets, not leaving any suspected place for  
money unsearcht, by which I guess him to have belong-  
ed to our profession, and was not mistaken, as you shall  
understand by and by. He went to my horse, & viewing  
it, he seemed to like him very well. Wherefore com-  
ing to me ( said he ) you are but a raw Theif, a me-me-  
mer child, it is but fit that you should be sent to a ma-  
ster to be ta-ta-taught knowledg, and be whipt for  
your foo foo-foolishness. You said you must have my  
Fa - Fa - Fathers money, I tell you I must have  
your Hau - Hau - Horse, and so farewell He was  
so kind as to leave me his, which was a pitifull  
deed, however necessity compelled me to mount  
it, and anger spur'd me on to be revenged of the  
Hofler,

Halter, but I better considered with my self, that probably that horse was known there, and so I should be detected; wherefore I rid a contrary way, & took up my lodging in a place I never had been in before. As soon as I alighted, abundance of People flocked about me, seeing me all bloody to know the cause thereof. Whereupon I related in a very doleful manner how this fatal accident befel me. That travelling to such a place with about one hundred and fifty pieces of Gold, I was set upon by five or six lusty Rogues, who rob'd me, and because I made what resistance I could, to save what I had, it being my whole Estate, they had the barbarously mangled me, hacking and hewing me till I grew weary, and at last with much difficulty escaped with my life. There was a general sorrow for pitying me so much that the Inhabitants strove one with another, who should shew me most kindness. A Chyrurgeon was presently sent for, who (as he was a Barber too) *Barbarian* like dress'd my wounds; some were employed in procuring me Cordials, and getting me things necessary; others were sent out to make enquiry after the Thieves.

This Gentleman that serv'd me this trick, was (as I understood afterwards) an High-way-man himself, who being well born and bred, but his Father being at that time unable or unwilling to supply him with whonies his lavish expences required: Nature having bestowed on him a stout resolute heart, and strength answering his courage, betook himself to the *Pad.* in which profession he behaved himself so gallantly, that he was stiled the Father or Governour of his Tribe. But his attempts prov'd not alwayes succesful, so that there was hardly a Country in *England*, wherein he had not been in Prison; being frequently arraigned for his life, but having eminent and potent friends,

still came off; this did his Father and Kindred so frequent, that they grew weary, and he narrowly escaping with his life one time, and finding that his Kindred matter'd not much if he were hanged, he submitted to his Father, making a solemn protestation that he would never follow the like courses again: whereupon his Father settled an Annual Estate upon him, on which he now liveth very orderly. Thus much briefly of my overcomer.

I had not laid above a night in this place for the cure of my wounds, before I was question'd about my horse by some persons that knew him well, and taken on suspicion for murdering the Gentleman the right owner; which seem'd more than probable by various circumstances. First, this Gentleman was not to be found, which well might be his success, having convey'd him on the wings of speed to an obscure place, there to revel and congratulate his Fortune by the speedy spending his late purchase. Next, my many and dangerous wounds sufficiently declared the great hazard of the two Combitants lives: but that which chiefly committed me, was the Gentlemans horse, which I like an impudent insipid Coxcomb must ride on, which reason must needs say was the ready way to ride Post to the Gallows. Notwithstanding the miserable condition of my Carbonadoed body, I was enclosed between a pair of walls, and had undoubtedly been hang'd for being robb'd, had not the Gentleman appear'd again amongst his friends; then did my accusers slip their necks out of the collar, and none prosecuting me, I was discharged. Staying a little while in the Town for refreshment, an old acquaintance there found me, of whom I cannot but give you a character, since the passages of his life hath been so remarkable and notorious, and from the short relation of which I  
question

question not but the Reader will reap much benefit and satisfaction. For indeed examples have so great an influence and power upon the actions of mans life, as that we and men are more wrought upon by presidence than precept. To this intent preceding Generations have made it their grand care and labour, not only to communicate to their Posterity the lives of good and honest men, that thereby man might fall in love with the smooth and beautiful face of virtue, but have also taken the same pains to recount the actions of criminal and wicked persons, that by the dreadful aspects of *Vice*, they may be deterr'd from imbracing her.

About four dayes after I was discharged, there came into the same Inn where I lay a Gentleman, who hearing some of the house discoursing of the Robbery that was lately committed, he desired to be particularly informed, which they did, adding that the Robb'd Gentleman lay wounded in the house; he inquired of them my name, which they told him, as I had told them, having a name for every month in the year. Very desirous he was, if it might be no disturbance to me, to give me a visit, unto which I condescended, a servant to that intent desiring to know my pleasure. As soon as he entred the Room, I verily thought I knew him though I could not for the present call to mind where I had seen him. I was so muffled about the chops, that it was impossible for him to have any knowledg of me. He sat down by me, and askt me various questions, to which I gave him *convenient* satisfaction. At last I recalled my memory, and askt him if his name was not so----- he answered me affirmatively. Dear friend (said I) I am glad to see you: come, be not amazed; my right name is so--- with that he embrac'd me, and was overjoyed that he casually found me out. Laying aside all formal niceties, I unbosomed my self to

to him, nor minding the truth in the least; for we know our-selves *Birds of a feather, Rogues together*. He condol'd my wounded condition, and comforted me, by telling me that he would not leave me till I was well, and that he would procure me such a *Plaster* for the wounds I had received, that should prove very effectual. He staid with me above a fortnight, enjoying what pleasures the Country was capable to afford us. Being by our selves (for so we designed the Major part of every day;) we discoursed interchangeably of nothing but our adventures, &c. how we might lay new plots for our advance: I gave him the epitome of what I had done, since I left him, who took more pleasure in the relation of my Rogueries, than the *Quaker* did in Courting the *Mare* near *Colchester*. But when he began to relate his Villanies, I was struck dumb with admiration; and what cannot a man do if indued with the strength of his natural parts, sharpness of wit, quickness of apprehension, depth and solidness of judgment, with a tenacious memory? Now because he ever had a smooth and insinuating tongue, with the command thereof, I shall give him leave to tell his own tale.

*Dear Friend,*

For what am I beholding, it is to Nature alone; for as I am ashamed of my birth, so I cannot condemn my Father for not bestowing Education on me, since his condition was so low, yet his spirit so high, that he would not beg himself though ready to starve, however would permit me, which was the sole support of his and my life. I was ten years old before I could meet with any preferment; one day fortune favouring the offer'd to my view a commodity, which with confidence I might carry off undiscovered. My hands presently effected what my mind suggested, it was of but small

lue, the utmost I could get for it was a Link, with which that night I more then trebled what it cost. This course I followed by night, and ran in errands by day, so that I had furnished my self both with cloaths and money. In process of time I was admitted as a Servant into a Scribeveners house; my Master taking a liking to me, put me to a Writing school, where being capacitated for his business, he puts me into the Shop, and instructs me in his employment. I had not been there long before I made my self very eminent, by studying the Law, the Rudiments whereof I understood so well, as I knew how to ingross an Indenture. This made my Master esteem of me, and that estimation made me proud; and being not yet bound his Apprentice, I thought I knew better things than to be his servant any longer, and so left him. Then was I with an Attorney a while, afterwards with a Counsellor, till thinking I had Law enough, I took an house, resolving to see what I could do with it my self. I solicited several mens businesses, giving a general content, in so much that my credit and reputation increased dayly. Now did I marry for wealth, having not the least affection; for her face lookt much lik a gammon of Bacon with the skin off. Sometimes I liv'd with her, too long for any delight I took in her; and being resolv'd to be rid of her, this stratagem I used. I shewed her more kindness than formerly, pretending I would do nothing but what I would consult with her about, which so wrought upon her love, that she would have been content to have sacrificed her Soul to my interest, and made her withal so opinionative, that she judged every silly and unfavory expression she utter'd was no less then *Oracle*. Having brought my business thus far to perfection, I came home one evening very melancholly: very inquisitive she was to know the cause. My



Dear, (said I) I will not conceal any thing thing from  
 thee, such a Gentleman hath injur'd me, and I cannot  
 till I be revenged. Thou knowest my Nature, if  
 wrong'd I am implacable, it is a fault I cannot help.  
 Come, come, said my wife, let us go to bed, and there  
 we will consult. Being there she askt me how we  
 should bring our revenge about? I seemed to study a  
 while, --- I have it now (said I) thou art with Child;  
 in one tender of his reputation; tax him for being  
 the Father of it, and that will do the work to my full  
 content: very loth she was, because the talk of the peo-  
 ple, but I satisfied this poor silly harmless soul, by tell-  
 ing her that as long as I knew her chaste, it was no  
 matter what others said of her: whereupon she conde-  
 scended, and had the Person before a Justice, where she  
 swore positively that she was got with Childe by that  
 Gentleman. I presently took advantage of her con-  
 fession, turned her off, leaving them both to the dispo-  
 sal of the Spiritual court. This was my first Prank.

One of my Clyents another time, having bought a  
 good handsome Tenement, had so much confidence as  
 put me into possession; my Client having purchas-  
 ed an Estate in the Country, was forced to be there  
 to look after the management of his Rural affairs, for  
 a certain time; I took this opportunity to forge a  
 lease to my self, at an easie Rent, from him that con-  
 stituted me his Trustee, I soon found a Chapman for it,  
 and sold this Lease, receiving a good round Fine, which  
 had been a penny-worth indeed, had the Title been  
 good, unto this man I delivered possession, who dwelt  
 till the return of the right owner, who coming to  
 his house, wonder'd to find every thing so contra-  
 ry to his expectation, and demanding of the Tenant  
 what power he inhabited in that dwelling, the poor  
 man shew'd him his forged Lease, declaring that he

had paid his fine to such a man, nominating me, who at that time was not to be found. The Landlord could do no less than eject him his house, but finding him so grossly abused, required nothing for the time he was in it, but left him to the Law to require satisfaction of me. The abused being very much troubled he should be thus deceived, made so strict inquiry after me, and so unwearied in his search, that at last he found me out, who said, nothing should serve his turn, but he would for this cheat have the rigor of the Law executed upon me; knowing of what dangerous consequence it was, I let my adversary arrested in an action of a Thousand pounds, who wanting B y l was committed to *Newgate*, where grief released me by his death from ensuing prosecution. Afterwards I forged a deed of sale of an House hard by the former, which would have made more for my advantage, had not this man discovered my design, which made me the more inveterate against him and his.

For this was always my temper, though nothing could provoke me to express my anger in company (as having a perfect command over my passions in that nature) yet if any durst prosecute his own or his friends right in opposition to me, I seldom left him, till I had either absolutely undone him, or I overpowered him, that he should be in no condition to hurt me, or do himself, making him at last confess that he had been better to have sat down with his first loss. And this effected the easier, having a conscience that scolded nothing, and instruments that would swear any thing.

These contrivances of mine made me generally reputed a subtil and knowing man which brought me in multiplicity of business, with considerable incomes. Neither did I at one solicit for such as were concerned in the law

law, but I had my concernment with *Lifers*, who did put so great confidence in me, that what they got was left solely to my disposal, either by sale or pawn, for which I had my brokerage, and something else beside. Now I was grown so famous (my Garb adding much to my fame, which was very splendid) that if any intricate controversie, reference, or Law-suit arose among my Neighbours, they knew no person fitter to make their appeal to, than myself for arbitration. If any again wanted either money, goods, nay a cooler of concupiscence, I was adjudged the best *Procurer*. By these means I tumbled in money; and to let the world know it, I wore a several Suit every day, having besides Habits suitable to any design. Now did those that knew me not, even adore me; those that were acquainted with me, out of fear were forced to shew me more than ordinary respects. I confesse had I now walkt in a *medium*, this had been the time (as they say there is a time allotted to every man) to have made my self forever. But Knavery was so implanted in my Nature, that I could not forbear cheating the dearest friend I had, if he intrusted me, circumvent every man that had more honesty than my self; and though I was sure to damn Soul and Body, yet I must attempt the destruction of my adversary, and to speak the truth, I did not stick to betray my friend, if any advantage would accrue to me thereby. For one trick I serv'd an antient widdow, I now and then find some internal gripings, I cannot tell whether they proceed from conscience, because I never knew what conscience was, and this is all. A Gentlewoman of my acquaintance, whose sole dependence was upon Lodgers, and having taken up a great many Goods to a considerable Value to furnish her House, besitting the reception of any Person of Quality, for which she was indebted, and

having too often put off her Creditor, came to me, desiring the favour of me to procure her fifty pound, telling me that such a Knight, and such a Squire would stand bound with her; that will not do (said I) for the Gentry have so many tricks to keep Citizens out of their money, that they will have better security. Perceiving her present necessities were very urgent, I knew I could do any thing with her; wherefore I perswaded her to confess a judgement: she agreed to it. I told her such a day it should be done, but I would speak with the Parry first: according to day the prefix I came, bringing with me a warrant of Attorney, with a friend or two to attest it; she confided so much in me, as to seal before she received the moneys. That being done, now come along with me (said I) to such a place where the money lyeth ready. As we were going, there was a stop in a Lane by Carts and Coaches, and by the help thereof I dogg'd her, she seeing me no more till it was too late: for I came with an execution a while after, and carried away every penny-worth of Goods she had; yet so civil I was, that I would not let her see it done, knowing it could not but be a great trouble to her, to that intent about half an hour before I sent for by name, far enough distant from her own habitation. In this nature with some variations as to the manner, I served several. Knowing I had a plentiful invention, which seldom failed me, I scorn'd to be so idle as to mak use of one trick only, to bring about my ends, and as I had several, I never made use of one trick twice, for fear of being smockt. I seldom went abroad, but I had some of my Complices at my heels, rarely going together, unless necessity required it. I went into a Coffe house one day, and sat me down at a common Table, (as the Room is to all comers) a little after came in one of my Imps, and sit himself

himself down too. I had then a very curious Ring upon my finger, which a Gentleman opposite to me perceiving, pray Sir (said he) do me the favour as lend me a sight of that Ring on your finger; I presently delivered him; having viewed it and comended it, my Rogue must needs desire a sight of it too from this Gentleman, who thinking no harm, gave it into his hands; after he had lookt on it a while, he fairly marched off with it: I saw him, but would not in the least take notice thereof, knowing where to find him. The Gentleman imagined nothing to the contrary, but that the right owner had received it again. A little while after, I demanded very courteously my Ring, excusing his detension thereof upon the account of forgetfulness. The Gentleman starting, replied, Sir, I thought you had it long since. I told him I had it not; and as I delivered it to him, I should require it from no other person. He pist at it, and in the conclusion bad me take my course; and so I did, having first taken witness of the Standers by, I sued him, and recovered the value of my ring twice over; producing two in Court that swore point blank, that the one of them sold it me for so much----. One thing I confess I frequently made use of, which was this; If any person dyed, and none durst administer, but leave the Deceased's Goods to the Creditors, then would I be sure to make my self a principal Creditor by a forged Bond, and thereupon sue out letters of administration, and sweeping all away, I wiped the nose of other Creditors.

I went on a time to see a Prisoner in *Ludgate*, but thinking to come out again as easily as I went in, I found my self just as the Picture I have often seen upon the *Exchange*, wherein is represented a man plundging himself with much ease into the great end of the Horn, but with the greatest difficulty can hardly squeeze his

Head through the other end. Hell Gates stand ever open to let all souls in, but none are suffer'd to go out. Here I waited two hours for the return of the Turnkey, fretting my self even to death for being detained from my urgent occasions. At length he came: I told him what an injury he did me; instead of excusing himself, he returned me very scurvy Language, which provoked my passion so much, that though I said little, yet my invention was presently at work to be reveng'd.

Not long after I got a poor fellow to be arrested for an inconsiderable debt, advising him to turn himself instantly over to *Ludgate*. In a short time the poorness of this mans condition was generally known, and he himself pretending he was almost starved, got liberty to put in what slender security he could procure for his true imprisonment, and so had leave to go abroad. In the mean time I had got a Bond of the Prisoner of fourscore pound for the payment of forty, and so went privately and enter'd an action of Debt. I told the Prisoner the next time he went out he should run away, which he did, neither was there any security to be found; then did I bring my action against the Keeper, with my *Knights of the Post*, and so recovered the money.

---



## CHAP. XX.

*What a freak he play'd upon a Jeweller.. He puts a notable Cheat upon a Gentleman concerning his House. How he cheated a Scrivener under the pretence of bringing him good Security for an Hundred pound which he would borrow. How he was revenged on a Broker for arresting him for some Goods he had past his word for upon his friends account. How he cozened a rich Usurer & a young Tradesman. He discovers the subtilty of some citizens he had to do withal by broking for them, relating his own craft and cunning & what the consequent was, the ruine of young Gentlemen.*

**I** Was intimately acquainted with a Jeweller in Foster-lane, whom I often helped to the sale of Rings and Jewels, so that my credit was very good with him. Being one time above in his work-room, I chanced to spy a very rich Jewel, whereupon I told him I could help him to the sale thereof; my Lady such a one having lately spoke to me about such a thing. He gladly delivered it to me at such a price to shew it her. But I only carried it to another to have one exactly made like it with counterfeit stones. Before I went, I askt him if the Lady dislike it, whether 'I might leave it with his Wife or Servant? H, (said he) to either will be sufficient. I was forced to watch one whole day to see when he went out; and being gone, presently went to the Shop, and enquired of his Wife for her Husband; she answered me, he was but just gone. Well, Madam (said I) you can do my business as well as he, 'tis only to deliver these stones into your custody; & so went my way. Not long after I met him in the streets, carrying displeasure in his looks; Sir (said he) I thought a friend would not have serv'd me so; but I deny'd it stiffly. Whereupon

Whereupon he was very angry, and told me he would sue me ; I valued not his threats, and so left him ; I had not gone many paces before I met with a friend, that complain'd to me he had lost a very valuable Locket of his wives, it being stolen from her. Glad I was that this should fall out so pat to my purpose ; I askt him to give me a description of it, which he did punctually. Now said I, what will you give me, if I tell you where it is ? Any thing in reason. Then go such a shop in *Foster lane* ( the same shop where I cheated the man of his Ring ) and there ask peremptorily for it ; I was there at such a time and saw it ) and that he would have had me help him to a Customer for it ? I'll stay at the *Star-Tavern* for you. Away he went and demanded his Locket : The Jeweller deny'd he had any such thing, (as well he might.) Upon this he returned to me, and (by this I had another with me) and told me what he said. Whereupon I advis'd him to have a warrant for him and to fetch him before a Justice of Peace, and that I and my friend ( which saw as much as I ) would swear it. The Goldsmith was instantly seiz'd on by a Constable, and as soon as he saw who they were that would swear against him, desired the Gentleman to drink a glass of wine, and then tender'd him satisfaction : But I had order'd the business that it would not be taken unless he would give us all three general releases. He knowing the danger that might ensue to life and Estate if we persisted, consented to the proposal.

Walking one time in the Fields with an Attendant or two, who would be constantly bare before me, if in company with any persons of quality, but otherwise, *bail fellow well met* ; I was got as far *Hackney*, ere I thought where I was ; for my thoughts were busied about designs, and my wit was shaping them into a form ; casting my eye on the one side of me, I saw

the prettiest built and well situated House that ever my eyes beheld. I presently had a covetous desire to be Master thereof : I was then, as Fortune would have it, in a very gentle garb ; I walkt but a little way further, and I soon found out a Plot to accomplish my desires. And thus it was : I returned and knockt at the Gate, and demanded of the Servant whether his Master was within ? I understood he was, and thereupon desired to speak with him. The Gentleman came out to me himself desiring me to walk in. After I had made a general Apology, I told him my business, which was only to request the favour of him, that I might have the privilege to bring a workman to Supervise his house, and to take the dimensions thereof, because I was so well pleased with the building, that I eagerly desired to have another built exactly after that pattern. The Gentleman could do no less than to grant me so small a civility. Coming home, I went to a Carpenter, telling him I was about buying an House in *Hackney* and that I would have him accompany me to give me (in private) the estimate. Accordingly we went, and found the Gentleman at home, who entertained me kindly as a stranger. In the mean time the Carpenter took an exact account of the Eerts and Bounds of the House on Paper ; which was as much as I desired for that time.

Paying the Carpenter well, I dismiss him, and by that Paper had a Lease drawn with a very great fine (mentioned to have been paid) at a small Rent ; Witnesses thereunto I could not want. Shortly after I demanded Possession. The Gentleman thinking me out of my wits, only laughd at me : I commenced my suit against him ; and brought my own Creatures to swear the sealing and delivering of the Lease, the Carpenters evidence, with many other probable Circumstances to strengthen my cause ; whereupon I had a Verdict : the Gentleman

Gentleman understanding what I was, thought it safe to compound with me, and lose something rather than lose all.

Attiring my self in one of the richest Garbs I had I went to a Scrivener in *Bow lane*, acquainted him I had an occasion for an Hundred pound. He demanded the Names of my Security. I told him where they lived two Persons of eminent worth (whom I knew were gone into the Country) and desired him to make enquiry, but in it to be private and modest. The Scrivener according to my desires went and found them by report to be what they were, real, able, and sufficient men. two or three days after I called upon him to know whether I might have the money up on the Security I propounded. He told me I might, bringing the Persons; and appointed me a day. According to the time I came with two of my Complices attired like wealthy grave Citizens, who personated such Persons to or the life, that the Scrivener could not entertain the least suspicion. The money being ready, I told it over, and put it up in a bag, I and my insignificant Bondsmen, sailed, leaving the Scrivener to another enquiry after us, whom, if he did not meet, I was confident he could never find out by reason of our feigned Names. It chanced that my forged and fictitious name took hand, with that of a Gentleman in *Surrey*, who was a great purchaser, which I came to know by being accidentally in his company the next night after I had cheated this credulous Scribe, understanding likewise from him the exact place of his abode; and as the Devil would have it, his christian name was the same, as well as his Surname, with that of mine I had borrowed. Whereupon I went to the Scrivener again, and told him that now I had a fair opportunity to benefit my self very much by a purchase, provided he would assist me

with

with 200 l. more. But Sir, said I, take notice (in a careless and generous frankness) that it is out of a particular respect to you, that you might profit by me that come, again, neither will I give you any other Security than my own Bond, though I did otherwise before. But if you will desire to be satisfied as to my Estate, may I let your Servant go to such a place in Surrey, where is a peice of Gold to bear his charges, and I will satisfy you further for the loss of your Servants time. He being greedy of gain, very officiously promised to do what I required, and would speedily give me an answer. Imagining what time his Servant would return, I repaired to him again, and understood from him by the sequel that he received as much satisfaction as in reason any man could require. Hereupon I had on my own Bond the money paid me. I cannot but laugh to think how strangely the Surrey Gentleman was surprized when the money becoming due was demanded of him, and how like the figure of man in hangings the Scrivener lookt when he found himself cheated.

Notwithstanding I dayly thus, almost, cheated one another, procuring thereby considerable sums of money, yet, by my Drinking, Whoreing, and defending myself from such as I had wronged, I seldom kept any money by me. One day as I walk'd the streets secretly as I thought, a fellow fastned his *Flesh books* on my shoulder. Looking about to see what this sudden meant, I saw a fellow behind me, whose face look't ten times worse than those *Philistines* that are pictured in chimney pieces, seizing upon *Samson*; his mouth was largely vaulted as that within *Aldersgate*; his visage was almost eaten through with pock-holes, every hole as big, that they would have served for children to play in Cherry-pit; his Nose resembled an Hand-saw; he took both Head and Face together, and it appeared

appeared like the Saracens on *Snow-hill*; questionless some *Incubus* begot him on a *Witch*. Having a little recovered my self from my amazement, I askt him what his business was with me? He spake but little, leaving his errand to his *Mace* (which he shew'd me) to relate. Away they carryed me to *Wood street* at the *Kings head*, from whence I sent for *Bail*, which speedily came to me: having put in *Bail* to one action, I found another enter'd: having done the like to that, I found another, half a dozen more bearing it company; wherefore thanking my friends for the trouble I had put them to, I desired them to leave me, resolving to go to *Ludgate*. The two *Serjeants* that arrested me conducted me thither, having my name enter'd in the *Paper house*, as *Horses* in *Smith-field* are in the *Toll booth*: *Cerberus* turned the *Key*, and set the door wide open as *Westminster-Hall Gate* in the *Term-time* to *Country-Clients*, to receive me from my *Hell guides*, which puts me in minde of that old verse,

*Noctes atque dies patet atri janua carceris,*

I no sooner was enter'd into this enchanted *Isle*, where to me lye wind-bound sometimes seven years together, but a fellow (whom at first sight I took to be a *Gardner*, becaule he had a kind of *Reddish beard*, and turn'd up withal) came to me, and understanding I was a *Prisoner*, seem'd mighty courteous, proffering me his *Chamber*, for my *Garnish* sake. I accepted his kindness, and went with him to view this *Cobweb-hung Chamber*, for so it proved; I demanded of him who should be my bed-fellow? that Gentleman there Sir, said he, that sits by the fire side: I could not forbear smiling, for he was a fat squobby fellow, though his brain seem'd to be leap. I believe he was his own Barber, and

was



was forced to make use of a Knife instead of a Razor ; for his beard was cut round like a rubbing brush. Certainly, had all the skin of his body been like that of his face, it would have serv'd excellent well when he was dead to make cloke-bags of. Not content with this lodging, I sought out another ; liking it some what better then the former, I pitcht on it. Assoon as they understood my resolution, they worried me presently like angry Mastiffs, barking for their Garnish ; I told them they should have it to morrow, at which they gumbled like the greatest flings of a Base - Viol. Before I went to Bed I must pay for a pair of sheets, that never came nigh *Holland* by three hundred miles, and out of much civility my Bed-fellow brought me a candle not so long as his nose to light me to bed.

The next morning I made it my business to get out assoon as I could, some I paid, others I non-suited, and so got clear.

Being out I resolved not to rest till I had revenged myself on this Broker that had thus troubled me, I needed not means, for the Devil seldom failed to help my inventions. I pretended to go into the Country, and in order to it, pack'd up a Trunk of what I had most valuable and portable, and getting a Porter, sent it to an Inn, where a *Norwich* Carryer used to lye, but I knew him to be gone the day before. Going along with the Porter, I enquired for such a Carryer, but they told me he was gone, and would not return till the next week. I askt them where I might lay my Trunk safe : they shewed me a Room ; where bidding the Porter sit down, I called for some Ale, telling the Porter moreover, that I would have him to be a witness of what there was in a Trunk, lest I should be dishonestly dealt by ; whereupon I unlockt it, desiring him to take notice, which he did, and to be more sure took

an Inventory in writing. Having paused a little, now  
think upon it (said I) Porter, it will not be safe to leave  
this here in a publick house, as in a friends, wherefore  
prethee go buy a Cord, and thou shalt carry it else  
where. Whilst he was gone, I took out the chiefest  
things and put in rubbish, or what I could get, and  
locked it again. The Porter returning, we corded the  
Trunk, and carryed it to this Broker, who took  
kindly from me, that I would intrust him after our  
controverlie, and received it. The next week I told  
him I would call for it, in order to the sending it into  
the Country. The time being come, I took the same  
Porter with me, and demanding the Trunk, it was  
forthwith delivered me. Come, Porter, said I, you  
must uncord it again, for I have present use for some  
thing therein contain'd; which being done, I seeming-  
ly amaz'd, cryed out I was rob'd, taxing the Broker  
for so doing, vilifying him for his knavery. He protested  
that he never lookt on it to his knowledge since the re-  
ceipt thereof. Well Sir (said I) this shall not serve  
your turn, this honest Porter knows how differently  
it is fraught from what he saw it at first. In a seeming  
heat I lett him, but before he slept I sent a couple of  
Serjeants to him who arrested him; coming to try  
by the assistance of two (resolv'd Jurors) and the  
Porter, I over-threw him, and recovered above forty  
pound, besides cost of Spair.

Being resolved to go and look out some of my Com-  
forts to rejoyce together for my good success in my  
advantageous revenge, I met with an old Comrade who  
had lately been'd a Booth, Anglice, broken open a Shop  
who told me he had a quantity of good commodities  
and desired me to put them off for him, knowing that  
deale in brokage in goods indirectly come by: I pro-  
mised him I would. The next day he delivered what he

Part.  
now  
to leav  
herefor  
it else  
chj:fe  
t, and  
rded th  
took  
ter ou  
k I tol  
it im  
he sam  
k, it wa  
d I, yo  
or some  
seeming  
Broke  
proteste  
e the re  
or serv  
fferently  
seeming  
ouple o  
to try  
and the  
ove for  
  
my Con  
s in m  
ade th  
n a Shop  
moditie  
ng that  
: I pro  
d what h  
ha

chap. XII  
he had i  
Uferer  
only d  
questi  
upon th  
freely  
light  
Bed ch  
who d  
No, n  
ever le  
ented  
contai  
Wine  
can ie  
Shop  
ake b  
good  
to th  
was  
comi  
in th  
ore  
s Be  
ger  
Wa  
him  
ple  
g r  
wo  
the  
my  
co  
po  
v

He had into my hands, I instantly carried them to an old  
 Offerer that would grasp at any thing, telling him I  
 only desired to Mortgage them for such a time, re-  
 questing to lend me fifty pounds thereon. He looking  
 upon them to be thrice the Value of that sum, lent me  
 freely the quantity of money propounded, and in my  
 sight took the Goods and laid them in a place next his  
 Bed chamber. The same day I met with this friend,  
 who demanded of me whether I had done his business?  
 No, not yet (said I) it will be to morrow first: How-  
 ever let us drink a glass of wine, which he readily con-  
 sented to. Having drank pretty smartly, he could not  
 contain himself (so powerfull are the operations of  
 Wine, as it frequently makes a man divulge that which  
 carrieth in it inevitable ruine) I say he told me whose  
 Shop it was he robb'd, and at what time. I seem'd to  
 take but little notice then, though I intended to make  
 good use of it. Parting with him, I went straightway  
 to the person rob'd, and told him that accidentally I  
 was informed of his late loss, and that my intent of  
 coming was out of a principle of honesty, to assist him  
 in the recovery of what was stolen from him. But be-  
 fore I acquainted him with any thing, I required of him  
 a Bond of 100 L. if I helpt him to his Goods; which he  
 granted me. I advised him to get the Lord chief Justices  
 Warrant, which he did, and taking some friends with  
 him, I directed them where they should go, and in what  
 place they should find them. He would have had me  
 gone with him, but that I excused my self, alledging it  
 would be inconvenient. Taking a Constable with them,  
 they went and found what they sought for according to  
 my direction, which they seiz'd, leaving the old man to  
 condole his loss, which had been no great matter, had  
 not his life lain in his Purse.

Having thus carried on my mischievous con-  
 trivances with continued impunity; The next

one was a young Merchant, to whom I went gently haired, with a foot boy waiting at my heels. I looked out several commodities, and laid them aside, assuring him that I would ere long lay out a considerable parcel of money with him. We discours'd upon the price, and in the conclusion closed. The next day I appointed the Goods to be sent home to my house, and in the interim desired him to go along with me, and accept of what poor accommodation my habitation would afford him, under the pretence of being better acquainted, but my design was to raise in him a good opinion of me, for I had one room (especially) very richly hung with costly Furniture. My motion was entertained, and away we went, where I treated him nobly; the next day the Commodities were sent in with his Servant, who expected his money, but I pretended my Cashier was abroad, and so desired him to call the next morning; he did, but then I was not to be spoken with. Thus he did so often till the young man was weary. At last the Master himself came, who met me just as I was going out; who had not the patience to ask for his money, but presently railed most bitterly, calling me cheat, knave &c. and that he would not put himself to the trouble of posting me up, but would have a Warrant for me instantly.

Being gone, I was as nimble as himself, having a couple of my Emissaries ready for him against his return. It was not long before he came strutting with a Constable. Perceiving him coming, I sent my two friends out with their Warrant, and putting it into the Constables hand charged him in the Kings name to execute it upon such a one, meaning the Merchant; who dared not deny it, but carried him before a Justice, before whom my two Rogues swore flat felony, and so committed. Sending for friends, they advised him  
 for  
 was



to make an end thereof. Whereupon I was much sol-  
licited; and upon consideration I consented to cause my  
friends to forbear prosecution.

As yet I have not fully unbowell'd the huge bulk of  
my villany, that hath proved so burthensome to the  
world, and destructive to so many Families; where-  
fore give me leave a little farther to anatomize my  
own vicious nature, and I shall so lay open the Ulcers  
and Sores of my Impostumed Machinations, apparent  
to the sight of every one, that the most Ospray and  
Owl-eyed Spectator shall confess there never was a more  
necessary and commodious discovery revealed.

Brother said I, for so must I call you now, your *fla-  
gitious* deeds claiming that title, and must be compel-  
led I see to give you superiority, the upper hand, for I  
am confident the line of other mens inventions never  
founded the Sea of a more deep and dreadful mischeif.  
When I consider how powerful and imperious vice is  
of late grown; and what horrid facts are committed  
every where by licentious and wicked men that swarm  
in all places; I admire that the Fabrick of the Earth is  
not continually palsied by Earth-quakes, since there is  
a Creator above that oversees such actions. That the  
Earth her self (though an indulgent Mother) doth not  
receive into her Womb her off spring, and therein for  
shame hide them: that the air is not choaked with  
Froggs, and that black pitchy mists do not perpetually  
malque the face of Heaven, and leave the world in ob-  
scurity; and that the Sun doth not hide his face from  
seeing such enormous crimes, blacker than is the E-  
clipse of his countenance; and lastly, that the Sea is  
not turned into blood to pursue in minde of the cruel  
and remorseless usages of one another; our kindness  
being commonly attended with discourtesies of a Ver-  
million hue. Thus Brother you see I am sensible of my  
miscarriage

miscarriages, but want the power to regulate my life. I would have preceeded, but that I found this discourge grated in his ears ; wherefore I desired him to prosecute his story, which he did in this manner.

Like an Hawk as I told you, I flew at all Game, not confining my self to any one thing particularly ; where I could abuse the Law, I did ; and if I had an opportunity to Trappan, I seldome failed, &c. Some part of my time I spent in the enquiry of what young Heirs were arrived, into whole society I was sure by one means or other to insinuate my self. These Country Woodcocks I knew how to catch with a City Spring ; whom I very well understood, had rather be out of the world than out of the fashion, who would be brave for the present time, though their Gallantry cost them their future Fortunes. I commonly laid my plot thus : Sir, you undervalue your self by the meanness of your Habit, it being so unsuitable to your quality : if you want money, you cannot want credit, having a fair promising estate in reversion ; if you are willing, I will find you out a believing Mercer. Returning me many thanks, it may be he would be in such haste as to send me presently. He could not be so eager to have his gaudy desires satisfied, as I forward to accomplish them. I knew where to go readily to one, with whom I went forps ; in so saying, I would not have any think I throw dirt upon that noble profession.

If I discover the fraud of any particular Person, as long as I name him not, I do him no wrong ; but if I detect by what deceitful and sinister means he worketh upon the infirmity of the youth of a green witted Gallant, it may serve for an *use of instruction*. In the most famous Universities there are some Dunces resident, that by disgracing themselves, disgrace also their fellow Students. In the most vertuous Courts there will be  
some

some Parasites. So in the most goodly and glorious City under Heavens Canopy, there are some Asps lurking, that sting the reputation of their Brethren by their poysonous and Corrupt dealings. There are knaves in all Trades but Book selling.

But to my purpose: a young Gentleman coming out of Norfolk to see the City, and finding so many (beneath him in estate) gallant it so much above him, he grew very melancholly: hapning to be in his company, and indifferently well acquainted with him, I ask'd him the cause of his sadness? after I had prest him very much, he ingeniously confess the true original of his pensiveness. Pish, said I, is that all? let me alone to effect what you desire; neither shall you wait longer then the morrow. Leaving my Gentleman, away I went to a person fit for my purpose, and gave him an account of my business: glad he was & thank'd me for my pains, promising me a reward, and would needs have me to a Tavern to consult this affair. Having concluded every thing, I repared the next day to my Gentleman, who over-joy'd to see me, was impatient to know whether his wishes were consummated. Come along with me, said I, and we will try what we can do. I have been very importunate with the Mercer, but as yet I cannot mollifie him; it may be your presence may do much. Finding him in the Shop, I called him aside, and told him this was the Gentleman. My young Gentleman, that would be a Gallant presently, fell aboard him, and (with much fervency and protestations he woo'd the Mercer to credit him with Thirty pounds worth of Commodities. I settled him first, saying, What will Thirty pounds worth do? I'll give up a Hundred pounds worth; and what you order, I'll dispose by sale, to furnish your Pockets with money. He thank'd me kindly for my advice, and returned to the

Mercer, who askt him if he should credit him with so much, what security would he propound? this struck my young Gentleman as mute as a Cods-head. The Mercer perceiving he had nothing to say, plaid the *Rope maker*, being extream backward to trust him. Bonds he refused; Judgements he would not hear of. Statutes he scorned: for, said he, Gentlemen of late have found out so many tricks to cozen their Creditors. (I by the same means having had several Collops cut from the body of my Estate) that I will not credit any more: whereas he spake this only to gratifie the blunt appetite of my *Commodity taker* into a sharper edge, and make him more greedy of his own ruine, imitating in this a cunning and deceitful though petulant and wanton Curtezian, who is once when a sick brain'd young Gallant importunes her to admit of his amorous kindness, only to make him more fierce upon his own confusion: holding him off like a Peccer, a month or two, that he may come up the ladder roundly to her purpose. But to the matter. My Gentleman being as it were denyed, I seconded him thus: Sir, you know not what you do in refusing to credit this Gentleman; he is his Fathers heir, a man of a vast Estate, and very aged: This his Son is about a very great Match, a rich heiress; and though he hath not money for the present, yet let him have an hundred pounds worth of *Commodities*, you need not doubt your payment; and it will do him at this present a thousand pounds worth of good. The Mercer began to hearken to this, and protested to my *Green goose* that he would be glad to do any a pleasure, so as not to injure himself; that if he could but possess him with a belief that he should have his money in six months, he would freely let him have 100 l worth of what he pleased. The young Gentleman protested it, and I warranted

stanted it; and the Mercer (though seemingly loath) condescended, upon this *Proviso* still, that he should procure some man else to be bound with him, as good as himself; for, said he, we are all mortal and not having a lease of our lives, we may dye here to morrow; where then is my 100 l? Signior *Unbrist* is once more put to his *non plus*; but at length he fell to entreat me to do it, who would not by any means; and so we parted. He would not let me rest for two or three days together; so that at last, provided he would give me 10 l. I agreed; and so we went again to the Mercer, and entering into Bonds, we had the *Commodities*. Having made my young Gentleman an absolute Gallant, I went to sell what was left, of which I made 40 l. but I made my Gallant so be contented with 30. alledging, that when goods came once to be sold, they will not yield the moiety of what they cost, though new: and out of that 30 l. I had my ten pound, for suretyship. Thus I perswaded him to be very well satisfied. He revels about, whilst I was contriving to leave him as bare of means as brains. Now doth my Mercer dream of nothing but his pay-day, which he hoped would be broken. The time being expired, and my young Novice not minding it, the Mercer invites him to a dinner in *Fish street*. Dinner being almost ended, for a third course came up a couple of *Serjeants* stewed with *Mace*, who arrested him at the suit of the Founder of the Feast. Not procuring Bail, he was carried to the Counter, where he lay some time. His friends hearing of it, did soon to get him out, by suing out an *Audita querela*. My Mercer hearing of that, advised with one who was best to be done. Agree, said I, with some Officer in the Exchequer, and turn the Debt over to the King pretending you owe him 100000 money: for the

Chancery will not or cannot allow any thing in such a case against his Majesty. He so doing, did his business for the present

Thus have I read, when Jews have bought a red-hair'd body, at first they Cloath him in silks, ravishing him with all the delights that can be thought on; never have Musick from his ears, or Banquers from his taste; and thus use him, till they see he is plump, fat, and fit for their purpose: but when the poor Boy least thinks of his imminent ruine, he is taken by a barce of slaves, and tyed up by the heels, so beaten by degrees to death with Cudgels, purging the rankest poyson out of his mouth, and making Mummy of his flesh. I shall leave it to the Reader to make application. In short, I perswaded the Meccer to take a bond of 500 l. of his Prisoner, to be paid after his fathers decease. This Widgeon being in the nets, sealed to any thing for his liberty. He was not the first so served, by thousands: and that is the reason there are so many Crested Citizens: for Gentlemen being begger'd by their Extortion they have no other means then to *fall in* with their Wives, *purchasing* from them a supply. This is it that makes the road every where so full of High-way-men, who will borrow of men when they have little mind to lend, but not without giving them Bonds. This makes Tyburn the Metropolitan, and other petty Gallowses, have so many *hangers on*; and this is the cause so many such Citizens sons are plagued after their fathers deaths, as their Father when living have plagued others: These are the Boars that plow up whole Acres, nay fields of Gentlemens lands with their snouts. These are the Swine that eat up whole Orchards; and these are they, whose fiery consciences drink up whole Fish-ponds at a draught; and lastly, they are the *Hurricanes* that root up the trees of whole Woods together. From such, *libera nos Domine.*



To conclude, take this as an intallible Maxime, that the worst of Creditors are either very rich or very poor men. The rich man can pay for his money, and so will have all or none; the poor will have no pity, nor indeed can he; for the debt may be all he is worth.

## CHAP. XXI.

How he insinuated himself into the acquaintance of all he thought he could prey upon, and what tricks he used to build his interest upon their ruine. How he could make Ink that would disappear from the Paper, accordingly as he pleased, by the strength or weakness of the composition. His imitating exactly both Hand and Seal. A remarkable Story thereupon. How he cheated a young Citizen newly set up and an Upholster. He is at last met withal, and laid up in prison by one of his Creditors. The abuses and tricks Sergeants use to arrest men. Lastly, he escaped by putting a trick upon the Keeper

How can that Tyrant flourish in his commonwealth when the foundation of his Reign was built on the pulchar of the right and lawfull heir he murder'd? and how can those prosper, whose rise is rear'd from others ruines? such was I, who having oftentimes ragull'd by Knaves, turned Knave my self, and did as readily hunt after such I could make a prey of (to recover the loss I had sustained by others) as the devil doth at Witches souls, being on their death beds, resolving to be like a Bandite on the spoil. Like an old soldier having been beaten to the world (or more properly beaten

ten by the world, I began to summon up all my senses and my idle brains to a strict account, how, to get that up again, my riot and folly had spent; and thinking I had no way to recover my self, but by what ruined me, I did cast about me, and fished after this manner. I prepared my lines, provided baits, and made ready my hooks, which had such constant and firm baits, that after I had struck a Gudgeon in the gills, I was sure to hold him, though I suffer'd him to play a little in the stream. The Flocks I daily frequented, were either the Temple, Ordinaries, Play-houses, Cock-pits, Brothels, or Taverns, leaving no place unsearch'd, where there might be any thing worthy a bait. If such was found, like a shadow I was never from his heels, but followed him close, especially if he was a young Country Gentleman, whom his Father had sent up to see fashions in the City: and rather than he should go out as raw as he came in, I failed not to season him in one of the Citties powdering Tubs. First, I made it my business to know what his Father allowed him; then would I study his natural disposition and inclination, and accordingly suit my self to him, so that by my behavior towards him, he should look upon me to be his *Masculine sweet heart*, his bosome friend, and that like *Hippocrates* twins we must needs live and dy together. Having accordingly by much sweat and industry adopted and fitted him to my humour and purpose and wrought him to such a soft and waxen temperature; that I could make what impression I pleased on him. I brought him acquainted with some of my accomplices, who all vail'd bonnet to him, invited him from Tavern to Tavern, not letting him expend a penny; or if he wanted money, I would supply him with four or five pound. This innocent (not having yet scented the City Air) all this while thinks himself

Elisav

*Elizium*, fancying he enjoys more delights then the  
*Jarks Paradise* affords; and withall magnificeth himself  
a little graced, to be entertained among such seem-  
ing Gallants. For my Rogues (give me the liberty  
to call them so) lookt on it as the greatest piece of  
policy to wear good cloaths, though their pockets  
were worse furnished then a Chandlers box, that sel-  
dom hath any greater money in it, then Two-pence  
Three-pence, Groats, &c. Sometimes my Cully did  
meet with some that knew me, who would advise him  
to have a care of me, and not to keep me company,  
for I was a dangerous person, and in the end would be  
his ruine. Whereas it was but to little purpose: for  
when youth is in its full vigour; and height of desire  
neither wholesome counsel, nor lamentable examples,  
will give them warning of their future destruction.  
So I continued my seeming respects and kindneses,  
to him, which I only intended as the *Preludium* or  
Prologue to that Play which was to come after: for  
my Country Cock brain being honoyed with these  
sweet delights, thought that whatever he could re-  
ceive, was not able to give an answerable satisfaction.  
Watching a fit opportunity (when he was well warm'd  
with Wine) then would I perswade him, (which was  
no difficult matter) to be bound with me for so  
much &c. which I promised I would repay at the day,  
without putting him to any inconvenience: but he  
knew not, that what I borrowed for an hour, I bor-  
rowed for an age. When I could squeeze no more juice  
out of him, then I left him to the mercy of his Credi-  
tors, to be dealt withal as the *Popin jay* in the Fable,  
who being summoned to appear with the rest of the  
winged Tribe, before their King the Eagle, borrowed  
all the finer sort of Birds feathers to adorn him,  
and make him appear splendid before his Sovereign.

After

After he was dismiss'd, he proudly flutter'd up and down the woods with his borrow'd gallantry; which made the little Titmouse, Wren and Hedge-sparrow adore him. They to whom he was obliged for his gallantry, hearing thereof, demanded again their own, and so deplum'd him, whereby he seem'd ten times worse than those small Birds that lately did adore him. Such Popinjays are they, who borrow of every Citizen, to make themselves shew glorious in the worlds eye; but when the Creditors shall come and claim their own, and get it, they will seem more foul, then lately they did fair. So various and villanous were the pranks I committed every day, that I was forced now, like an Owl, to appear only by night in the City. If I did at any time transgress that custom I did them like the dogs of Egypt, which when they come to drink of the river Nilus, lap here and there, not daring to stay long in a place, for fear the Crocodiles that lye lurking within the banks, should pull them into the Current: so did I, skulking here and there first to one Tavern, and then, not daring to stay longer there, shifting to another. But to proceed,

Reading one time a book that an Italian writ I found therein a description of several sorts of Ink and how to make them; but more especially, an Ink that should last a week, a month, or two, according to the composition. I made an experiment, and found it but indifferently well: perceiving how beneficial this would be to me, I resolv'd not to rest till I had found out the true Receipt; which I did at last, by much study and industry. Having obtain'd it, I so highly valued it, that me thought I would not have parted with it for the *Philosophers Stone*. Not to be tedious, I did abuse there with many persons with Bonds, Leases, Deeds, A quittance, &c. there appearing in such a time nothing

nothing but the bare Seal, the paper remaining as white  
 as if never writ on. By the help of Graving, I could  
 counterfeit Seals exactly, insomuch that I have often  
 cheated the *Grand cheater, Oliver*, the late hypocriti-  
 cal and bloody Tyrant; and by an exact imitation  
 of an hand Writing, his Council was too too sensible  
 of what Cheats I put upon them. That I was no bang-  
 at it, I shall give you this instance. Accidentally  
 coming acquainted with a Gentlewoman, very beauty-  
 ful and well featur'd, her sparkling eyes set me all in a  
 flame, so that I resolv'd to attempt the enjoyment of  
 her. Oftentimes I visited her, and by the modesty of  
 my carriage towards her, she perceived not my burn-  
 ing lust. One time having a fit opportunity, she being  
 alone, I communicated my thoughts to her: waving  
 that amorous discourse past on my side, I would have  
 fallen roundly to the matter, but she understanding my  
 intent, cry'd out, whereupon I desisted, seeing it was to  
 no purpose if I proceeded. Sitting down by her, she  
 express'd an absolute hatred to me for my incivility, and  
 said she would neither see nor endure me more. The  
 vehemence of her utterance and countenance fully de-  
 clar'd she was in earnest; so that I saw 'twas time to  
 be gone. Looking about (unperceived by her) I took  
 up half a sheet of paper of her writing, and clapt it  
 in my Pocket; and so took my leave. Coming home  
 I found my love converted into hatred, and there-  
 fore vow'd my revenge: and thus it was. I under-  
 stood from her, whereabout her Husband lived, and  
 what his Christian name was, with something of her  
 concerns; that her Husbands Mother could not in-  
 terfere her, (because her son married her without a por-  
 tion, though a wise discreet, vertuous, and handsome  
 man) and whereabout he lived, with name, &c.

I counterfeited a Letter, as from this vertuous Gentlewoman, to a Gallant of hers, taxing him with want of love and that if he proved not more constant, she had no more to say to him &c. The contents you shall have in the Letter it self, as followeth.

Most beloved by me of men?

I cannot blame you so much as my self: it is customary for man to profer but then it should be a womans duty to refuse: but alas! how could I withstand the powerful perswasions of your eloquent tongue, especially when they carried with them so much seeming reality of affection and constancy? I finde you now like other vow breaking men, who having obtained the fruition of their desire their appetites nauseates that which before it so eagerly crav'd. Call to mind those many endear'd and melting expressions you did voluntarily utter, when I was encircled in your arms; and if that will not reduce you to your former station, and good esteem of me, now so much slighted by you, consider that I have preferred you in love before my Husband, not caring how much I wrong'd him to pleasure you. If nothing will prevail know then, that shall be my resolution, that since you have alienated my affection from my Husband, and you thus unworthily desert me, I will procure a Subject elsewhere shall out do you in every thing; as much or more as you have out done my Husband. I am young, plump handsome, and buxome; what then should hinder me from enjoying such a person, my heart will not rest satisfied till I have found which having done, he shall lead me in thy view, and then it is probable you will but never shall reassume your place again within my breast. Farewel.

This Letter was sent to her Mother in Law in the Court



Country, who was glad she had matter to impeach her daughter to her son. As soon as he saw the Letter he very well knew the hand, he thought, and would have sworn it to be his wife's: but reading the contents, the poor man was ready to sink down for grief. Perturbation of mind would not let him rest in his Country- dwelling, but rid up Post to *London*, where he soon found out his wife. The unexpected sight of him at first surprized her, not hearing of his coming, and knowing that his occasions were very urgent in the Country: however, like a truly loving wife, she was overjoy'd to see him, and would have kiss'd him but that he rudely thrust her off; which action struck her to the heart, and overwhelmed her in amazement. Prethee, Sweetheart (said she) what is the matter? There, read it, said he, throwing her the Letter. She read it and was wounded: He let her lie, not caring whether she lived or dy'd; and had dy'd indeed, had not her Maid come accidentally. Being recover'd, he ask'd her whether it was her hand. She could not deny it: which made the man rage, ready to run out of his wits, whilst she was silent with astonishment, taking such inward grief, that she betook her self to her bed. Nothing could comfort her, neither would she take any thing to sustain life.

Hearing how powerfully my forgeries had wrought, to the hazard of some lives, in the same hand I sent him a Letter, wherein I gave him an account of the design, proclaiming to the world the Gentlewoman's honesty, unspotted and unstain'd. The Gentlewoman recovered in a little time after, but this trick had too much seiz'd upon my Gentleman; for like a fool he fell distracted in a sneering posture, as pleas'd to think his wife was honest notwithstanding. I have been somewhat long in this relation, because it was a passage very remarkable

remarkable. Now I shall tell you how I cheated young Citizen and an Upholster.

A young Citizen about to set up, and wanting some money, was directed to me, to procure so much as his present occasion required. I treated him very civilly, promising very fairly; and in order thereunto, appointed him a day, which being come contrary, to my expectation or desire, he brought a crew with him to see the receipt of the money. Judging this time inconvenient for my designs, told him I expected the money this very day; but if he pleased to seal the Bond, and have it witnessed, he might keep it himself; and bringing the Bond with him the next day, he should not fail to have his money. The next day he came to the place appointed, where I was ready to wait on him. As good fortune would have it, he came alone, I discours'd with him a while: at last I desired him to let me see the Bond; which he delivered into my hand, being sign'd and seal'd before. I took this as a good and lawful livery, and put it up into my pocket. He asked me what I meant. I told him he should know when the Bond became due. Why Sir, said he, you will not serve me so? Don't thou think I am such a fool said I, to lend thee so much money upon a piece of paper, which next shower of Rain will wash away with thy self into the common Shore? Shall I trust thee, when thou canst not trust thy self? At this the young man began to be clamorous; but one of my accomplices soon fill'd the Clapper of his mouth, by a sound knock on the pate which laid him asleep; and in the mean time we march'd off. Just as the money came due upon the Bond, my flock parted. It was gone to tell his friends in the Country the danger of Counters and prisons in the City.

At another time I wanted money to supply my pre-

Part.  
reated

g some  
h as hi  
civilly  
to, ap  
to any  
h m, to  
incon-  
e many  
ad, and  
bring  
not fail  
e place  
. At  
courts  
me see  
being  
d law  
ed me  
en the  
ot serve  
to lend  
ch nex  
nto the  
a can  
n to be  
li'd the  
pate  
march  
ed, my  
in the  
in the  
y pre-  
sent

ship.  
on O  
her r  
ry  
when  
w  
ly f  
ut w  
mans  
ed co  
ough  
with  
modi  
desire  
d I  
kn  
post  
of a J  
take  
him  
(an o  
not  
mine  
with  
Ha  
or co  
on w  
ly th  
had i  
le sta  
wha  
l ther  
teller  
atrec  
for i  
be a  
ation

on occasions, but could not instantly think of any other means of assistance in this necessity, but to sell my feather bed, together with its appurtenances. Thereupon I packt them up, and desired a friend to go with the Porter, and sell them to an Upholster. My friend did so, and brought me half their worth; but withal that which was more than their worth, the same name. A week after, I wanted my bed, and resolved to have it again. To that end, I went to him that bought it, and asked him before a couple that I took with me, whether at such a time he had not such commodities sold him. He acknowledged that he had, desired to see them: and he as readily granted it. Sir, said I, these are my goods: I was lately rob'd, and now I know you are the receiver: I must have you before a Justice, to know how you came by them. The naming of a Justice so terrified this silly fellow, that he bid me take them if I would swear they were mine, and put him to no further trouble. I swore they were mine, (and therein I was not perjurd) but told him I could not receive stolen Goods safely, though they were mine own. In short I recovered my Bed and furniture, with money to boot.

Having gone thus far without any remarkable check or controul, at least any such as might bear a proportion with the villanies and injuries I had done, I absolutely thought that nothing was dishonest or difficult that had in it either pleasure or profit, meeting with no molestation or hinderance I took my freedom to do even what I list. One time thinking my self most secure I then found my self in the greatest danger, being arrested in an action of 5000 l. Several times there were attempts made to take me, but I was still too cunning for them: yet at last they over-reached me; it will not be amiss to relate in what manner. They had information that every week I had letters come out of *Essex* & the Porter

Porter which brought them had still free admittance to me : wherefore the Serjeant provided himself a Frock and a Rope about his middle which would better have become his neck, and with Letters in his hand directed to me, trudged to my Lodging. Knocking my door, and being demanded his business, he told me he had Letters for the Master of the house, nominating me, looking out and seeing no body but a seeming Porter, I order'd that he should be let in. As soon as he was enter'd, he bid my worship good morrow, and instead of delivering me his Letters, shewed me his Mace which I wisht might be the only spice and meat too he should eat for a twelvemonth. Seeing how I was betrayed, I went quickly along with him to the Compter and afterwards, finding I could make no composition with my Creditors, turned my self over to the *Kings Bench*.

Various are their tricks and inventions to ensnare whom they intend to arrest. Sometimes I have known a Creditor seem to comply with his Debtor, telling him that paying some inconsiderable matter, his Bond should be renewed with longer time : then appoint him a place of meeting, where he saith he will bring a Counsellor and Scrivener ; a Counsellor to advise them in management of their business, and a Scrivener to write what they determined. He acquainted a Serjeant and a Yeoman with his Plot, who were as hot upon it as an *Italian* on a Werch of fifteen. The Serjeant going with a Barresters Gown on his back, and the Yeoman with his Beard cut as close as a Stubble-field, with a Pen in his ear, and some Parchment in his hand, effected their design without suspicion. A Merchant knew, that intended to break and go beyond Sea, was betrayed by his servant, who informed his Creditors that just at such a time his Master would be gone ; that



the Morrow he would send for Coopers to hoop some dry-fats to pack his goods, and that if ever they hoped to have their money, they must make that their time. Some Serjeants were presently acquainted herewith, who attired like Coopers in red caps, canvas-breeches, with Ads in their hands, and hoops about their shoulders, went to the Merchant, and were entertain'd, whilst he was giving them direction, instead of hooping the dry-fats, they hoop'd him in their arms, and arrested him. Before they parted with him, they made him part with so much money as would satisfy his Creditors and them; and made him see them besides, not to enter any other action against him. They will change themselves into as many shapes as *Proteus*, to bring about their designs: sometimes like grand wealthy Citizens, other times like a Countrey fellow newly come to town, with boots and spurs all dirty.

Now as I have related their manner of arresting, so let me in short inform you of their using (or rather abusing) Prisoners. First they enquire of the person whether it be the first time he was arrested: if so, then they know the better how to deal with him: perhaps they will carry him to the Tavern, pretending to do him kindness, where they will advise him to send for some friend; and one of them will be the Porter himself; but instead of fetching the friend, he only enquires out his Creditors, and perswades them to use this opportunity to recover their debt: mean while, the other that is left behind doth *milk* him. The messenger returning, sorrowfully tells him his friend is not at home. Getting as much as they can by spunging, and sucking the very *heart-blood* of his pocket, the Compter must be his refuge at last. Some-times when they see a man in fear of Arresting, they will without Warrant

of the Creditor give him a cast of his office, which they often do before they enter their action, and have ways to prevent any mischief that can come, by search of the offices. Other times for a fee, they will send to the party to keep out of the way, as was concluded before hand. Oftentimes upon an Arrest, if the Creditor stand not by, they will let the party escape for a brace of *Angels*, or so: and tell his adversary that he cannot set eye on him. And whereas their Fee for an arrest is to be but 1 s. yet will they hardly be perswaded to do their office under a *Crown*; and albeit the Statute say that the party arrested shall pay but one *Groat*, I will not excuse him for an *Angel*. If a man oppose them, or endeavour an escape, they will both gripe and Pinch him, and afterwards clap an Action of *Assault* and *Battery* on him at their own Suit. I could say more of them, but that for fear, I must be favourable, who am now as I tell you, a prisoner in the *Kings bench*, which may be called *The Bankrupts Banqueting-house*, where he feasts himself on dishes borrowed from other mens tables; or *The Prodigals Purgatory* and *A Pest-house for decaying Citizens*. Weary of this place, wherein are as many maladies and mischiefs as flew out of *Pandora's* box opened by *Epimetheus*: I invented this stratagem. One day I pretended much business abroad, and so got leave to go out with my Keeper, resolving not to return with him. Having been from Tavern to Ale-house, and so to Tavern again, pretending the dispatch of much business, I at length told my Keeper, that I would visit a very dear friend of mine, but that I thought it requisite to be trimm'd first. He consented, we went to the Barbers. I sat down in the Chair first, and being dispatch'd, I desired the Keeper to sit down too, and I would pay for sprucing his *Physiomy*. Whilst he was trimming I talkt

to him of one thing or other to hold him in discourse. At last said the Barber, *Shut your eyes or else my Ball will offend them.* Shutting his eyes, I took an occasion to slip out, planting my self in an house hard by; the Barber not imagining I was a prisoner. The Keeper not hearing me talk, valued not the smart, but opened his eyes; and seeing me not in the shop, rose up, and went so hastily, that he overthrew Cutbeard, and the reason on him, running out into the street with the Barbers cloth about him, and *Don Barberoso's Turbant* on his head. The people seeing him thus with the trothabout his face, concluded him mad, and as he ran gave him the way. The Barber with his Razor ran after the Keeper, crying, *Stop him stop him, that I may be revenged on the Rogue.* The other ne're minding the Outcry, ran staring up and down as if his wits had lately stole away from him, and he in pursuit of them. Some durst not stop him, others would not, thinking the Barber by his posture intended to have his Testicles for abusing his wife. To conclude, the Barber at last seiz'd him, and having recover'd his cloathes, and made him pay 6 d. for shaving. The Keeper was dismiss'd with a kick or two in the Arse; the Barber not suffering him to speak a word in his own defence. Thus freeing my self, I resolv'd to take the Country-air, where I happily met with you. Many other things worthy remembrance did he relate, which now I have forgot. Some while we staid together, but at last his business call'd him one way, and my *Padding Trade* another.

## CHAP. XXII.

He is laid up in Oxford Goal by his Host; he is cheated at Chester; and after some time is ransomed thence by some of his Comrades, Knights of the Road, they paying his Debts. He returns to his Brethren the Knights of the Road, whom he finds with two or three Gentlemen, Strangers; he cheats one of them of a very fair and rich Watch. He puts a notable Trick upon a Physician. He falls in love with a wealthy Widow, who is poetically inclined, he courts her, and in a short time enjoys her, and after that ingratiously leaves her, carrying away what ready money she had.

Our Crew having been abroad, we had got a valuable purchase; which after we had divided, I told them, that I would but visit a friend at Oxford, and repair to them again within two or three days. My old acquaintance being overjoy'd to see me, after so long absence, treated me very gallantly, introducing me into the Society of the Wits; who would frequently drink too, till they had lost them. The company pleased me so well, that I thought it a solecism in civility to be sober, when they made any appointment for mirth; and they being true *Bacchanals*, in the uppermost Classis of *Aristippus's* School, scorn'd to be outv'y'd by a junior Sophister; and therefore, that I could, they would be drunk before me: they either contended about any argument that tended to

abridge

riety, but swallowed them all. I thought they would  
 ever have done speaking of Sack; every one endeavouring  
 who should speak most in its praise. One said,  
 That *Diogenes* was but a dry fellow; and the only reason  
 he could give for it, was, That it is shrewdly suspected  
 by the Commentators on his Tub that, that wooden  
 case of his was given him by a Beer brewer, who being  
 an enemy to all good wits and learning, gave him this  
 Sack, which formerly had contained that pernicious li-  
 quor, Beer, that by the meer scent he might destroy his  
 understanding. But *Bucchus* is so witty a Philosopher,  
 that he never fails, night nor day, to pour forth his in-  
 structions, till he hath filled his auditors out of mea-  
 sure; it is he that makes us speak fluently, and utters  
 our minds in abundance: for my part, I am commonly  
 overjoy'd in his company, that I have often feared  
 I should never be my own man again. Said another  
 this Sack was the *Promethean* fire, not stolen from  
*Jove's* Kitchen, but his Wine cellar, to increase the na-  
 tive heat, without which we are but cold clay; but  
 that celestial liquor applied even to the dead, will  
 cause a revivification: that is it which gave *Ganymede*  
 beauty, and *Febe* youth. Can you think, that ever  
*Aristotle* would have been taken notice of, had he  
 drunk Ale or Beer; or, that *Alexander's* conquests  
 had been heard of, had he been sober? therefore to  
 make his Captains famous to posterity, he taught them  
 how to muster Quarts and Pottles, and by accustom-  
 ing them to be dead drunk, shewed them the way to  
 contemn death. All this is true (said another, so  
 drunk, that what he spake could hardly be understood)  
 but pray take my opinion with you too: do not all  
 light things ascend? what better way is there to un-  
 derstand high matters, then a light head? *Copernicus*  
 by the lightness of his head, claimed alliance with hea-

ven, and by that first found out the motion of the earth which he could never have done, had not Sack been his instructor. Hence grew the Proverb, *In vino veritas*, as if Sack were the only Butt truth shoots at, the piercing of which causeth the other to be drawn out with it. For my part Gentlemen, said I, my passion was never more stirred then the other day, comming by a red lettuce, unto which I have a natural antipathy: there did I hear a Tapster aver, that *Helicon* was nothing more then an Hogs-head of March beer, and that *Pegasus* was anciently a Dray-horse: and then speaking of *Faench Wine*, in derision, called him frisking *Mon-sieur*; and the Spanish, *Don Rhodomontado*; swearing, that if ever he met with either, he would challenge all the Drawers in the Town to dash him as he would. Then tumbling two or three small Beer oaths, he wisht that he might never look through his red lettuce Per-cullice, If he did not verily believe he should see *Man-sieur* burned with a pox to him, and Spanish *Don Mull'd* to death with butter and eggs.

*It is a thing beyond my reason,  
That we strong Ale for Sack should quit,  
Since 'twould have blown us up by treason,  
Had not Ale bestrirr'd our wit:  
Then exiles e Ale, but banish Sack;  
That Spanish Don, must have the rack.*

I could do so 'tis for his malepertness, but breach his Hogs head, which to convince him of his error, ran Tertie Claret: I heard afterwards, this accident converted the Infidel. We span out various discourses of this nature, as long as we could see, and then each man reel'd



would to his respective lodging. The next morning, walking abroad to finde out some of my last nights associates, unfortunately my *Chester* Landlord ( who having some business to do in *Oxford*, was newly come thither to dispatch it ) espy'd me, and without acquainting me ( like a subtile Sophister ) watcht whither I went : Being hous'd, he presently fetcht two Officers, and coming out into the street napt me. I sent to those friends that had been so merry with me ever since my coming to that City ; but they understanding the business, came not neer me ; one pretending indisposition of body ; another, that he was not within ; the Third that he was about urgent occasions, which having finish't, he would wait upon me ; but in fine, none came to my relief, shewing themselves right poor Companions whose courtesies it may be, shall extend to the payment of a Reckoning, when their friends wants it to discharge it himself ; but disappear and vanish, when their assistance is implored to draw him out of Prison. Seeing no remedy, I patiently suffered my self to be confined. My adversary visiting me, I treated with him about my releasment, offering him what I had, which was neer upon half ; but his resolution was to have all, or there I must lie. Though I could not much condemn him, yet I could not but complain against the, inconstancy of Fortune ; and ruminating within my mind the Miseries that attend all sort of Prisons , I Judged that of Debt to be the most deplorable ; and and though I wanted liberty , which commonly doth depress the mind, yet by the vertue of Canary ( which I could not be without ) my fancy scorned to be fettered , but would in spite of fate, use her freedom. 'Tis some kind of pleasure and Comfort, for a man sometimes in Adversity , to descant on his own miserable Condition ; which because I found

found experimentally true, I applied my self to my usual custom, the use of my pen, differencing these Metropolitan Prisons thus;

*To Bedlom men are sent bereft of wit;  
When 'tis restored, then they are freed from it:  
Confin'd to Newgate long, men can't complain,  
For once a month they're clear'd from it and pain;  
In a short time their Bolts wear off, and then  
They may be sure ne're to come there agen;  
Discharged thence their fettered souls shall be,  
Only an hour confin'd, and then set free.  
Bridewell, no wiseman yet did e're dispraise thee,  
For thou dost feed the poor, correct the lazy;  
The expiation of a little time,  
Forgives offenders, and forgets their crime.  
Hereafter from this Prison, Heav'n defend me;  
Rather to Bodlam, Newgate, Bridewell, send me;  
For there Wit, Work, or Law doth set me free,  
Nothing but money here gets liberty.*

Having lain here above a week, I sent away a Letter to my Brethren informing them of my misfortune, and acquainting them with the sum I was imprisoned for; which was sent me by them, and brought by one of our trusty Knights: paying the Debt and Fees, I returned again to them.

My Companions took little notice of me at my return, which made me think there was some design in hand; but according to their usual course, fell to drink high: observing two or three faces, I tipt a wink to one of my Brethren, being in another room; I ask'd him, who they were, he replied, Gentlemen that were travelling into the North; to which he added, we have been pumping them (ever since we did thrust our

selfs

comes into their company) to know what store of  
Cash they had about them; but we find little more  
then will defray their necessary expences on the Road;  
only said he there is one of them hath a very rich  
Watch: I bid him return to his place, and I would  
warrant him to have it before he stirred I came in again  
to the company, not taking the least cognizance of any,  
but shewed much respect and civility to them all, as a  
stranger; I purposely asked what it was a Clock: one  
of the Gentlemen, and one of my friends, both pulled  
forth their Watches, striving who should first give me  
satisfaction to my question; after this, they viewed  
interchangeably the workmanship of one and the other,  
both praising the seeming goodness of each others  
Watch. At last my friend makes a proposition:  
Come, Sir, if you please we will make an exchange  
upon sentence and repentance. The stranger desired  
to understand his meaning: Why, Sir, said he, we will  
commit them both into the hands of any one indiffer-  
ent person, and what difference he shall judge there is  
between them, shall be given in money by him whose  
Watch is least worth. It was concluded upon; but  
they could not agree into whose hands to put them.  
At last it was mutually agreed upon between them that  
I being a stranger to them both, should be the decider:  
I seemingly refused it, but they would not hear me  
alledge any arguments to the contrary; whereupon  
I went out, and immediately causing my horse to be  
brought forth, without the least delay I mounted, and  
away I rid. My Comrades knew where to meet me  
at the next stage. The next morning they found me  
out, telling me how they all storned to be so cheated  
to avoid suspicion: and now did they all embrace me,  
promising to themselves great hopes in me from this  
adventure:

Near

Near adjacent to our general Rendezvous, I was informed of the habitation of a wealthy Physician, who had shewed himself fortunately expert in divers cures where it seemed that humane art had not sufficient power to give a remedy. The fame of his great skill and of many admirable cures, which to the shame of other Physicians, he had performed, made him so generally beloved and sought after, that in a short time he purchased by his sanatory industry, above 500 *l. per annum*, and seldom had less by him then a thousand pound. Thus much I casually understood from one accidentally, speaking of this his rich Neighbour: but that which pleased me most was, that (as he said) he seldom carried less then an 100 pieces of Gold about him constantly, derived from a fancy for the extreame love he bore that Metal. I could not sleep for contriving a way how I might disembody this Urinal of what it contained: sometimes I way-laid him in his return; but he was so well esteemed of, that he seldom returned without two or three Gentlemen to accompany him. At another time I thought to have pretended some distemper, and so have applied my self to him for cure; and imagining that he would privately discourse with me about my Malady, that then I would present a Pillol to his breast, swearing that should be his immediate and unavoidable Executioner if he did not without the least noise or resistance, deliver such a quantity of Gold; but this way I could not approve of, it being accompanied with so much hazard. At last I thought of this stratagem, which safely produced its effects: One day after dinner I rid to his house (seemingly) in extreame haste, which he might perceive not only by my own affrighted look, but by my horse, which was all of a foam. I ask'd his servant with much quickness, whe-

ther

Mr. Doctor was within; yes, Sir, (said he) if  
please to wait in, I shall call him to you. I wait-  
some time (for most of that profession must take  
the state upon them) and then Mr. Doctor came.  
(said I) the report of your great experience in  
your happy practice hath brought me hither, humbly  
supploring your assistance, and that instantly, if you  
have any respect to the preservation of life; the  
trouble I shall put you to, shall be gratefully recom-  
pensed to the utmost of my ability. The Doctor  
enquired of me, whom it was, and what manner of  
temper the Person laboured under. I readily told  
him, it was my Wife, who for some continuance of  
time, hath been extreemly troubled with the flux of  
her Belly; the more that is applied to it by us, the  
more it increaseth; wherefore, our help failing, I be-  
seach you lend us yours, and favour me so far as to ride  
with me to her. The seeming sincerity of my words  
prevailed upon him, as they would have done upon  
the most distrustful.

This Doctor (who as I was informed, was ac-  
customed to be induced more by gain, then fair words)  
gave me this desirable answer: Sir, far be it from me  
that I should refuse to do my endeavour to any person  
much less to a Gentleman of your Rank and Quality,  
with that little skill which I have in the knowledge and  
practice of Physick: if I can effect any thing for the  
good of the good Gentlewoman your Wife, I will at-  
tend you thither with a very good will, which at any  
time my charge requireth. Without attending any  
further discourse, his Horse was made ready, and so  
we rid away together. As we rid through a small  
Wood, leading him the way, I turned my horse  
about, and clapt a Pistol to his breast, shewing  
him withal an empty bag: See here, Sir, (said I)

my wife, which hath a long time been troubled with a flux or vomiting, which you please, the last I think more proper; for she no sooner receives any thing for her (and my) sustenance, but she immediately brings it up again at her mouth. Now Sir, if you do not find out some means to mitigate this distemper (the cure I shall never expect, as knowing it impossible) this Physician shall send you to *Æsculapins*, to consult with him what is most fit to be administered: come, Sir, let me advise you, and save your self the trouble of so long a journey. Your Gold an hundred pieces (as I am told) are the constant attending Equivocs of your Body; I say that is the best and only *Receipt* for a remedy. The Doctor perceiving there was no help, in much amazement and fear delivered me what Gold he had about him, which was neer upon the sum express: there was a rich Diamond Ring on his finger, which I desired him likewise to give me, which should serve for a perpetuall *memento* of his kindness to me. I commanded him as he rendered his life, to ride back again, without so much as once looking behind him; and that if he offered to raise the Country, if I was sure to die that instant, would be the death of him first. The Doctor followed my dictations so exactly, that I never heard more of him.

Having gained so much money by my own industry and sole procurement, I resolved neither to acquaint my Brethren therewith, or associate my self any longer with them, being so encouraged by this success, that I concluded I might achieve gallant things by my self, being belated one night, and some miles from any town I knocked at an house that stood in my road, imagining it at first a publick house for entertainment; one of the servants coming to the door, I found it no such thing, she demanded my business; Prethee sweet heart (said

acquaint



acquaint your Master, that there is a Gentleman requests the civility of a nights lodging : she goes in and informs her Mistress what I said ; who came to me with much respect, telling me, She questioned not but that I was a Gentleman, and therefore should be welcome to the mean commodation she was capable of shewing. I rendred her many thanks, and so alighted ; strict order was given to the Groom, that he very carefully lookt after my horse : this being done, I was conducted into a very fair Room ; there did I make my Apology in the best Rhetoeick I had, for I perceived he was endued with ingenuity, by the quaintness of her expressions ; *Ex pede Herculem* : Many things I forged, that the ways being dangerous, I was fearful to adventure any farther, having a great charge upon me. Such was her urbanity, that laying aside all niceties, she bore me company till it was time to go to bed, entertaining me all this while with what the house afforded, which was beyond my expectation. Every glass of Wine, or bit almost, that I committed to my mouth, she usher'd thither with some Apothegm or other : the whole series, indeed, of her discourse, was composed of nothing but reason or wit, which made me admire her, which she easily understood, I perceived by her smiles, when she observed me gaping, as I were, when she spoke, as if I would have eaten up her words. As her soul was beautiful, sparkling with celestial ornaments, so was the casket that contained it very fair, and enricht with Natures chiefest gifts : she was very clear skin'd, well bodied, a sharp piercing eye, a proportionable face, an exceeding little white hand ; and then she lispt a little, which became her so well, that methought it added a grace to the rest of her internal and external qualifications. Being about ten of the clock, she advised me to repose my self, supposing

supposing I was weary, I condescended, though with much regret to leave her so soon ; but good manners would not permit me to do otherwise. She conducted me to my Chamber, where bidding me good night, she betook her self to her own Chamber. That night I could hardly sleep, not so much for pure love, as the heat of lust : next morning, very early, I heard her stirring, which made me wonder ; but she told me afterwards, that she got up so soon, fearing I should have gone away, and she not take her leave of me. About eight in the morning, the Maid brought me up a Sack-poffer ; and a little after, her Mistress came, courteously saluting me, and enquiring how I slept : I return'd an answer, in as handsom terms I could utter : her eyes plainly discovered to mine, that she had more than a common respect for me. Having left me a while, I arose, and made my self ready for my journey : after severall discourses which she had engaged me in purposely to delay time, with much gratitude I took my leave, she attending me to the Court ; my Horse being brought out, halted down-right (she had caused him to be prickt in the foot, to the intent I might stay longer. ) Not knowing what to say or do, Well, Sir, said she, since this unhappy accident hath fallen out so unexpectedly, make use of my house, and what is in it, till your Horse be recover'd of his lameness. This was a proposition that my soul longed for : wherefore I could not but shew much satisfaction in the acceptance of this proffer. We walkt in again, and prosecuted for diversion sake our former discourse, intertining it with some love-touches at a distance, which she would frequently descant on pleasantly. We in this short time became intimately acquainted, which need not be much wondred at, considering the greatness of sympathy between us : that now the

Part.  
h with  
anners  
nduct  
night  
night  
as the  
er stir-  
after-  
d have  
About  
Sack-  
reous-  
turn'd  
r: her  
d more  
while,  
rney  
me in  
look  
se be-  
ed him  
e stay  
Well,  
fallen  
d whi  
enefit  
d for  
tion it  
again  
coarse  
tance  
antly  
inged  
ng the  
by the  
ed

Cha  
conc  
ning  
famm  
idle  
Eleg  
her  
for c  
fled  
radia  
they  
of m  
plan  
this  
I rac  
wha

S  
T  
S  
Z  
L  
L

T  
the c  
blig  
dam  
som  
will  
Mac  
have  
thin  
I me  
our  
to, a

conquest of her appeared not any ways difficult. Having talkt our selves weary, Come, said she, in a very familiar manner, I will shew you the product of some idle hours; and with that brought me several Epitaphs Elegies, Anagrams, Anacrosticks, Epigrams, &c. of her own composition, too many here to relate; but for their wit, deserved to have each line characterised in gold: some I would here insert, were not the radiant lustre of her conceits so great and glorious, that they would absolutely extinguish the dim-sightedness of my fancy. Having view'd them, I could not but applaud them, as their due merit; and I was glad I had this happy occasion to vent my own thoughts, which I tacitly insinuated in these lines, reflecting on her from what I had read.

*Sisters thrice three I've read of, and no more,  
Till your quick wit compleated half a Score:  
Since you are one, let me perswade you then,  
Be kind to me for they are kind to men.  
Dearest, be like them, they are soft and clishe;  
Let who will love the nine, give me the tishe.*

These Lines so powerfully wrought upon her, that she could not forbear to tell me, that she was much obliged to me for what I had writ. You cannot Madam, said I, cancel your obligation, till you have made some recompence: with that, said she smilingly, what will content you? The continuance of your favour Madam, is the utmost ambition of my desires. You have it Sir; neither can I deny any deserving man a thing so inconsiderable. By your favour Madam, love I mean. I never was so uncharitable, said she, to be out of love with any. I was glad to hear her reply so merrily: for a sort which so capitulateth, is half surrendered.

surrendered. Since I had broke the ice, I was resolved to prosecute my design; wherefore in plain English I told her, that I loved her from the first interview, so ardently that my constancy should prove the reality of my affection: she desired me to leave that for the rest of time; that should she believe me suddenly before she had made tryall, she should not only lose the good estimation she had gained by the prudent and discreet management of her affairs, every one accusing her for too much credulity, but thereby it may be involve her self in a Labyrinth of all manner of troubles. Tryal, said I, you shall have: and knowing the manner of Courting a Widdow, a tryal I gave her, knowing that parley operate little on a Widdow, and there is nothing sooner gains a conquest then a resolute assault. This action made her so firmly mine, that I durst not speak of leaving; which when I did at any time, her Soul was ready to leave its ancient habitation to attend on me.

Some two months we spent in all manner of self pleasing delights, till at last I began to be tyred with her too frequent invitations; the more I endeavoured to satisfy her, the further I was from it. Not only by her, but by others, this experiment I found, that the other I treated them, the more eagerly and earnestly they desired it. Being now incapacitated to hold out in this manner longer, I thought it high time to be gone but not without sufficient recompence for my service. She daily solicited me to marry her, which I promised her from time to time, waiting an opportunity when I might become Master of her treasure. One day in a froick, and the more to encourage me to make a speedy consummation of our loves by marriage, she showed me all her writings which concerned her estate (by which I found her to be so weathy a fortune, that I often



sometimes curs'd my unhappy stars, that they had thus  
 rob'd me from the complement of so great a bliss.  
 After this she shew'd me a trunk wherein was contain'd  
 her cash: then taking me about the neck with such  
 fervency of affection, that I thought she would have  
 strangled me, and with the repetition of kisses, she smil-  
 ing, ask'd me, whether these things satisfied me or not.  
 I told her they did, but they were not to stand in com-  
 petition with her most aff'cted self: with that she gave  
 me the keys of that trunk wherein her money was;  
 and in retaliation, I vow'd to marry her in four days.  
 In the mean time I flatter'd how I might be gone, but  
 could not contrive a way, she not induring me to be  
 out of her sight. In fine I feign'd some indisposition  
 of body, and that I would ride two or three miles  
 for the benefit of the fresh air, and return: with much  
 willingness she contented. Just as I was about to take  
 horse (having furnished my self with as much money  
 as I could well carry without discovery) she wept bit-  
 terly (as having I think a prophetick Spirit) I ask'd  
 her the cause of her discontent: all bathed in tears, she  
 answered me with a deep sigh, I shall never see you  
 more: Hard-hearted man: can you thus leave a wo-  
 man that loves you thus dearly, nay, that does on  
 you? I made many protestations to the contrary;  
 which were not believed. Seeing that I could not pre-  
 vail on her belief, I bid her farewell, setting spurs to  
 my horse, and was out of sight in an instant. I could  
 not but condemn my self extremely for this inhu-  
 mane act on: but considering that there is no slavery  
 greater then that of the smock, I soothed my self  
 up in mine own unworthiness; passing by a little  
 Ale-house, I call'd in, and over a pot of Ale I com-  
 posed these ensuing lines, which I sent to her

her by a Messenger I procured in the house, directed thus:

*Deliver these to the fair hands of Mrs. Pulcheria Tickleman, at her dwelling house, near Redding*

¶ The Contents were these, or to this purpose.

Madam,

*A Poetess you are, and Prophet too,  
Thus to divine I'm gone from you  
Eternally. 'Tis true: D'ye think that I can eat,  
Though ne're so choice, always one sort of meat?  
No faith; I'd rather wear a Porters frock,  
Than to be shrowded in one womans smock.  
You say you are with child; Pish don't complain.  
'Tis but the product of your fruitful brain:  
I're only big with fany, which may prove  
A witty Brat, like Pallas sprung from Jove.  
And have you then conceiv'd? How can I chuse  
But writ Encomiums on my fertil Muse?  
Mind not the Father, nor his Brat, for it  
Will like the Father live (no doubt) by wit:  
Let Pegasus be Godfather, the crew  
Of the nine Muses, Gossips; so adieu.*

¶ I desired no answer, therefore stayed not till the return of the messenger, but rid that night to Maidenhead.

## CHAP. XXIII.

He comes up to London, sends to a particular friend whom he could confide in, to come to him, and requests him to compound with his Creditors, which he did in a short time; and in a short time after, he attempts the Robbing of an house, but is taken and clapt up in Newgate: The miseries of an imprisoned estate, with the manner of his escape out of that Prison. He and his two Comrades (which he had delivered) disguise themselves, and having been old experienced Gamblers, they taught him all the tricks on Cards, by which they usually cheated their cullies or moutbs; and also how to nap, palm, or top a Dye; With all things thereunto belonging.

**T**He next day I rode towards London, and about twilight took up my quarters in the Suburbs, the day following I sent for a friend whom I could put confidence in, who came immediately upon the reception of the Letter. I communicated to him my intentions, who was very glad to hear of my resolution; yet I would not acquaint him how strong I was, nor by what means procured: 'twas enough that I gave him commission how far forth he should proceed, and no farther, which was half a Crown per pound. He went (after I had given him a list of them all) to every one particularly and treated with them so cunningly, and they despairing of ever recovering a farthing, condescended to his proposals; whereupon

he gets them all to subscribe, and then brings the paper to me: which I exceedingly well liked of. According to the day appointed, he carried them the money which every one received proportionably, each man respectively giving me his general release from the beginning of the world: they to whom I had confest Judgements, filed according to Law their discharges. But when my Creditors a little while afterward, saw me walk the Streets in so splendid a garb, some of them were ready to die with anguish: but that which troubled them most, was my supercilious looks when in company of them, & my slighting salutations. What I did in this respect, was only to have the freedom of walking the Streets, without the molestation of chargeable arrests.

I kept such debaucht Company, that the remaining part of my money grew low, and in a very short time after, was all spent. My drunken Companions failed me, and I having nothing left me but my cloaths, necessarily made me to condescend to the enquiry after the kind natured Gentlewoman my Wife: her nearest relations could not give any account of her, giving her over for lost. I wandered up and down, imploying all the powers of my wit and invention, in the search of what might conduce to supply my present necessities. While I was thus hammering out some new design on the Anvil of experience, I bethought my self where probably I might find my Wives Family: I went to Ratcliff high-way, and made enquiry of *Dummaris*, &c. the Metropolitane Bawd of loose persons, for a Gentlewoman of such a complexion, stature, and age, (twas but a folly to mention her name, for those that follow that Trade change their names as often as they do their places of abode) but that carnal load of flesh could give me no information, neither was it possible for me to

I have staid to hear it, the so stunk of Strong-waters,  
stronger then the Cask that never contained any thing  
like: I went down all along to the Cross, in my way  
I saw many Whores standing at their doors, giving  
me invitation; but being poor, they could not afford  
the charge of *Fucus* to that their faces lookt much like  
a piece of rambled Parchment, and by their continual  
traffick with Sea mens breeches, I could not come near  
them, they smelt so strongly of Tarpawlin and stink-  
ing Cod; yet still no tidings of her I sought for.  
From hence I went to *Fleet yard* but there they were  
so dawbed or plastered with paint, and botcht with  
patches, that had I seen her there, it was impossible for  
me to have known her. A way I went to *Listeners-  
lane*, *Sodom*, and *Dog and Butch yard*; but the Pox, it  
seemed, had not yet tried her in those places. From  
hence I went to *Whistons Park*, where I saw my  
Mad-dame standing at the door: her frequent Trading  
and those many thurs she had received between wind  
and water in the service, had so altered her counte-  
nance, and disproportioned her body, that I knew not  
whether this Frigate was English or Flemish built:  
but at last, having where she was, I boarded her, and  
made her lawful prize: mistake me not, I rummaged  
not in her Hold, fearing she was a Fire Ship. The  
sight and knowledge of me, made her shed some  
Babylonish tears, which I took little notice of, know-  
ing them either to be customary to that Sex, or the  
effects of a moist brain.

In we went together, where we had, according  
to the Custom of the House, Pint black pats of  
small Ale for two pence, and quarterns of Strong-  
water half fill'd for Six pence, with Biskets; which  
as soon as brought, every one broken, though

not a bit afterwards eaten. We must be smoaking too, though the Pipe must be thrown down carelessly, and often broken as soon as put to the lips: one of the Payers being gone down to draw some more drink, she begged me to conceal my self for the present, and comply also with the cheating customs of the house; and she would willingly pay all. I had hardly smoked two whiffs more, but that a fellow came where we were, swearing *dam-me*, why do you stay with this fellow, and leave me thus, you unconstant Queen? have I spent my estate on you, and must you now grow weary of me? and with that drew his knife, making a proffer to cut her nose off. I was so amazed at what I saw; and so irritated by passion, that I knew not which of them to be revenged on first, Sir, said I, I have been longer acquainted with her than you, and may justly claim a better title and more privilege; but as you have affronted me I shall require satisfaction instantly, not referring our difference to be decided by the field, an Umpire that Cowards frequently make choice of; so drawing my knife also, and seizing on his nose, which I intended to have divorc'd from his face. but I was prevented, for it dropt off into my hand. This accident so astonish'd me, and withal being much affrighted at the sight of his Deaths-head, I durst not meddle with him any further, least handling any Member, it would have dropt off in the same manner: he made a blow at me, but instead of striking me. I expected when his fist would have flown from his body into my face: he kickt at me, but that leg being up, the so her was incapable of supporting his body, and so he fell down. The old Bawd hearing this disturbance, ran to us as fast as the vast Bulk of her body would give her leave, whose pace was not much swifter than a Snail in his full career, who having fasted too long by



by the constant repercussion of the Sun beams on him as missing morning, forragereth a Garden for pillage. From the place whence she started, to that where we missed, was about six yards distance, and from the time of her setting forward, to the time she came to us (not to belye the woman) was about half an hour, and then too, out of breath, for the haste she made. Sirrah, sirrah, said she, come you hither to breed quarrels, and abuse civil Gentlemen, and it may be build a conscience too? get you out of my house, you Rascal I'll scald you out. By this time the Pimp came to their assistance, and so they all conjoynded to shove this poor fellow out of doors: and notwithstanding he had for two or three years frequented the house, yet they neither pittied nor relieved him as a maimed Souldier the markes whereof were a sufficient testimony, besides the loss of a Member or two.

Having discharged my reckoning, my Wife appointed me a place where I should meet her. Having now conveniency and privacy of discourse, we wav'd every thing that tended not to my present design, which was the contrivance of some way to live. At last we resolved to take an house and live together; I thought it was as good to be Pimp to my own Wife, by which means the Major part of the gain would be mine as Pimp to another for 12 pence a day and spunging, What we had determined, we soon put in execution: what money she had was laid out in utensils belonging to our Trade, as for bedding, linnen, chairs and stools, &c. The Tally-man or Broker, who sells his goods to be paid at 12 d. a pound per week: the truth of it is, we found of him, but more especially his servants, excellent customers; for they would for a private favour, cut off a score, sometimes two or three from the Tally. Our stock being but small, my wife was

was forced to be both Blind and Whore; but as soon as he began to increase, the guests came plenty to the Carters, wherewithal he had pickt up a couple of very well featured Country girls, and brought them home, entertaining them as servants: but showing so much kindness to them, as if they had been our nearest kindred, purposely to induce them to stay: The Whore, my Wife, intended to have sold their Maiden-heads at a dear rate; but in truth, I ever lov'd those things so well to put them to sale, having them in my possession. To be sure there of, I gathered my Rascals the first night, lest the infectious and contagious breath of some one *Suburbicari* might blast them: in four days time afterwards, I fitted them for their occupations, leaving the instructive part thereof to my wife to season them withal. I never saw two young Jades understand their Trade sooner in my life; for in one months time they could Chat indifferently, Wneedle most cunningly, Lye comfortably, Swear desperately, Pick a pocket dexterously, Dissemble undiscernably, drink and smoke everlastingly, Whore intimately, and brazen out all their actions impudently.

Now did I begin to renew my acquaintance with the Tribe of Rogues, with whom I grew so intimate, that I was seldom out of their company, either at home or abroad. To relate all the tricks and Rogueries we committed in one half year, were an half years work; therefore to be short, we were grown so notorious and so generally taken notice of, that at last my Wife, and her two Maids of dishonour were apprehended by the Marshalls men, and carried to *Bride well*; I my self narrowly escaping by flight: the next day I boldly went to visit them; notwithstanding their beating of hemp made them excellent well; and in truth I like say this more than there hath not been seen in that place a more servicable

terrible strong doakt Crew for many years. Looking very earnestly upon that Hemp my Wife was bearing, a deep fit of Melancholly seized me, proceeding from my imagination; for I fancied that very Hemp would make that very Rope which should put period to my life. The time of my visiting them, all out on the day of their correction; understanding much, I resolved to stay and see them well last, I said: My wife being manacled, and the whip ready to encircle her waste; Hold, said I, and then directing myself to the Masters of *Bridewell*; May it please your Worships, this woman now under correction, is the most impudent *Brazen-fac'd Whore* in the whole town; I have known her a long time, ever since, and a small time before she undid her Husband, a very honest man indeed, and had the good report of all his neighbours; but this confident *Quaran* could not then be content without her Stallion, whom she maintain'd by what she pilloin'd from her Husband, and so utterly ruined him: since she hath been the destruction of several, some in their estates, others in their bodily health, and now so far from being penitent, that she glories in nothing more, then in the relation of how she hath undone here and hereafter: wherefore I beseech your Worships, for my friends sake, this good honest man, and for the good of her own Soul, to give her one half dozen stripes to, the number intended to let them be laid home. I had no sooner ended my speech, but I vanished immediately. Just as I was out of the gate, I met two of my Roguing friends, whom the Devil had sent, I think, to way lay me: they were going, it seems, to see some of their Dexters that had that day been committed. Being overjoy'd to meet me so accidentally, they would needs have me to the Tavern with them: with a glass of wine we continued

consulted about divvise matters, no goodness to be sure; the result whereof was, that I should go to such an house, and try if by any means I could get into it unperceived, and obscond my self in order to my opening the door for them about twelve a clock. According to the time nominated I went, and with much facility conveyed my self into a lower room, wherein there was a bed, under which I crept, being confident I might lie there securely, till all the household were retired to take their rest. After I had lain about some two hours on the ground, there came into this room a servant: I peeped out, and by the light of his candle saw that which I thought would have distracted me with fear; it was the laying the cloth, by which I understood, the Master of the house intended to sup toere suddenly after, meat was brought in and served to the Table; then came five or six persons, who passing divers complements (all which needless ceremonies at that time, I wisht with their inventers were stark naked upon the top of the Snowy Alps) every one took seats. Had not there been at that time some small prattling children running up and down and making a noise the affright their appearance had put me in, would have betrayed me; for my knees knockt so hard one against the other, that they made a noise like a Mill clack, or the striking of twomarrow-bones together, for my life I could not prevent the Palsie from seizing every limb of me. My cruel fates had so ordered it that there was a small Dog in the room, and a Cat both dearly beloved by their Mistress; who would continually flinging down something or other, while they continually quarrelled about as jealous and covous upon the distribution of their Mistresses favours at length she throw down a small bit; the Cat being somewhat a more nimble servitor, and dilligent warier

than the Dog, took it, and ran with it underneath the bed; the Dog ran after the Cat snarling, endeavouring to affright her, that she might forsake the purchase: The Dog approaching near, and too much intruding upon her right, she puts him in mind of his duty, by one scratch with her claw, and chastiseth him for his rashness with two or three more: this so angered him, that he made a furious assault upon Puss, who defended her self as well as she could; but at length they closed, and grappling each other, they made a most hideous noise. The spot in which they fought this combat, was underneath the Bed upon my buttocks: The servant that attended being over hasty to quell the noise, by parting the fray, snatched up the fire-shovel, and throws it underneath the bed; had it hit my nose with the edge, as it did my breech with the handle, I should have had it pared off even with my face. the Cat instantly provides for her safety by flight but the Dog still remained behind grumbling, and now and then barking with such eagerness, that he became very offensive to the whole company. Wherefore the servant was commanded to drag him forth, which he did, beating him, and throwing him out of doors: in the mean time I was left in such a condition, as if I had been breathing my last. As soon as the door was open'd, the Dog came in underneath the bed with more fury then before: this second alarm did my business (or as they vulgarly say, made me do my business) for running fiercely on me, he had bit me by the nose, but that I snatch'd away my head from him: but not observing the bed post behind, I thought I had dashed my brains out against it; fear also having bereft me of my retentive faculty, I did let flie at one and the same time, which made so strange a noise together that they all rose from the table to see what was the matter

matter : their noses quickly informed them of some part, for the room was presently strongly scented. Looking underneath the bed, they could see poor *Jail Perus* giving up the Ghost ( as dying persons usually evacuate their ordure before their departure ) they pulling me forth, and quickly revived me, they roughly handled me, and then beat me, till I was ene dead again. Being taken in the present offence, I could expect no other but to be subject to the rigour of their vengeance; I could make no plea sufficient to stay their fury, or satisfy their revenge; having fetcht a Constable, I was carried before a Justice of Peace, who with little examination caused my *Mittimus* to be drawn, and so I was sent to *Newgate*. I was no sooner within, and under lock and key, but fetters confined my legs from stragling, and bracelets were clapt upon my Arms. The Rogues came all flocking about me for their Garnish, which I gave them: some of the gentiler sort added more to it, so that we had abundance of drink. But never did I hear so confused a din of *Damn-me*, and *Sink me*: others singing so lewd (*alias* roaring) that I thought my self in *Hell*, and that these were damned Souls that roared through extremity of torments. I thought none had been so wicked as my self, till I came among these *Hell hounds*. Not a word came from any of their mouths, but what was seconded with an oath, cursing their bad Stars, and Blaspheming. The Misery of this or any other prison is sufficiently represented, if by nothing else than want of liberty, that rich inheritance of living souls as it is the greatest of enjoyments, next that imperial Gem of health, so the want thereof next to sickness must needs be of all other the most bitter. Since then to be confined to the confines of a Goal, is to be in part unman'd, encomb'd alive, what and how great is that



Part.  
for  
ent  
r  
fai  
suall  
the  
ough  
had  
d ex  
their  
their  
Con  
who  
to be  
oner  
fined  
op  
out  
the  
un-  
ed a  
end  
that  
mi-  
ked  
Not  
was  
and  
xi-  
an  
ul  
ial  
en  
in  
is  
at

an was there: that is occasion'd not only by a want of liberty, but by a continual dread of shameful death! The terror of this place full of torture is so exasperated by the imagination of a noble mind, that Hell it self cannot contain more exquisite woes and pains, a continuance whereof were sufficient to punish all offences, if the Law d<sup>e</sup>prived with that debt due to Justice, the life of the offender. Your companions are none but licentious wretches, souls which daily surround you with their loathsome persons over-spread with rats and lice. Here sighing is our air, our comfort, our counsel, our food despair, our Masticke railing of sins, our recreation the destruction of vermin; folly, our expectation death and damnation. The keeper with the grim aspect of his stern countenance makes us tremble, with fear of a new martyrdom, whilst the insatiable Rascal in the raptors of his pride need not skrew his ill favoured face to a frown, for he knows not how to look otherwise; which to affects the spirits of we poor imprisoned slaves, that the conjunction of our looks seems to implore his smiles, whose stony heart having renounced remorse, casts a defiance on our sad and piteous faces. I might insist much further, but that I am hasting to get out of the miserable hell-excruciating Prison. One day after I had exasperated nature I chanced to view the seat, & found it was no difficult matter to go down the vault by the help of a rope. A trusty friend coming to see me, I told him what I had observed & what I wanted: some days before the fassions, he brought rope enough to hang'd us all. Having a respect to 2 more, which I honour'd for their admirable good parts, I informed them of what I intended: which presently we put in execution. First I went down, but I could have wished I fell up again; for I was up to the neck, and knew not

not but I might be deeper, but to my great comfort I found to the contrary: the rest descended after me, with the like good success. Having gotten us to an house, in which we could put confidence, we quickly freed our selves from our Iron tackle.

■ We had places enough to send to for change of apparel, as rich as we pleased, or as beggarly again on the contrary, according as our design required. Having lain in *Lavender* about a fortnight in this house, not only to sweeten us, but that the rumour of our escape and search for us might be over, we got our selves change of habits: Then did we all consult with our Looking-glasses for the change of our faces, not suffering our own Judgements to pass, without the approbation of the rest. In the first place I got me a coal-black Perriwig ( my own hair being flaxen ) and a small false beard suitable, with whiskers in the *Spanish* fashion: it was no great trouble to black my eye-brows every morning, then clapping a patch on my left eye, stealing out of the room, while my Companions were busied about the same imploy, not minding me, and coming in again presently, my appearance did put them all into a very strange confusion. I changed my voice, and asked them what they were doing, and speaking to them in a tone they were not acquainted with, their chops mov'd incessantly, but the Devil a word I could understand; they had got the palsie in their jaws by their sudden surprisal: To have observed the several Monkey-faces, and Baboon postures could not but extract laughter from the severest Cy-nick. Why don't you answer me, ye sneaking Rascals? Looking most piteously one upon the other, expecting who should speak first, at last said one, We mean no harm, we are only preparing some things for a Masque which shortly will be presented to the Citizens, [

we are persons therein concerned. I could not hold longer, but burst forth into an excessive laughter, by which they understood their mistake, not without shame enough to think that the apprehension of danger so slightly grounded, should so terrifie them, being struck dumb, and almost dead with a pannick fear. To be brief, we very well liked the manner of our Metemorphosis, and having borrowed some money as the necessary tools of our intended Trade, we adventured abroad. The first mouth we pickt up was in the Long-walk by Christ-Church, upon the account of a wager: there came towards us a young man, who by his garb seemed to be a Merchants man ( he afterwards proved so, and his Cashier ) I step. to him, and said, Sir, if it may not be too troublesome to you, I beseech you resolve me on question: This Gentleman hath laid an Angel with me, and referr'd the decision thereof to the next that came this way, whether this next adjacent Hospital be S. Thomas's, or S. Bartholomews. Said the young man, I can assure you it S. Bartholomews. Why then friend ( said I ) you have lost, Sir, will you be pleased ( if it may not be any great hindrance to your present affairs ) accompany us to the next Tavern, and participate of the losings? for I scorn to pocket it. He condescended, and so we went together: we discovered not any thing till the sixth pint, and then my friend, as by chance found a pair of Cards in a corner of the window, which he himself had laid there before. Here is a pair of Cards ( said he ) come, to pass away the time, let us play for a pint or so; so I really took up my friend, *Patt* was the Game; I won of him two or three pints, and ever and anon I would drink to the stranger, so that now he began to be warm'd, and seemed to take delight in our play, looking over my hand, and sometimes Prompting me to beat him when he did put to me. At last my friend

played

I played the High Game, as the term of Art renders it; that is, he gave me two Trays and an Ace, and reserved for himself two Trays and a Deuce. My Antagonist puts to me: I pretended I knew not what to do, shewed my Game to the stranger that looked over my shoulder: he jogs me on the Elbow; I still delayed: come Sir, (said my opponent) what will you do? I will hold you five pound on these my Cards in my hand. I received the second jog: will you go my halfe Sir, said I? He answered me, that he would. But alas we lost. It could be no otherwise. This so animated the stranger, that he perswaded me to play again, and that he would go the moyety of every stake. Sometimes 'twas so ordered that I won, but in fine, I lost forty pound, my Cully being half. He would now give over, being much perplexed that he should thus lose his Masters money: but that he might forget the condition he was in, we drank round some half a dozen healths: So that now I thought it high time to provoke him again to let down his milk by some new trick or stratagem.

Now did we fall to the *Preaching of the Payson* a trick on the Cards, which hath deceived the most curious eye, and the wariest of men; with which we gained from our young marchant, the Major part of his money.

Lastly, to the intent we might without any further delays give him an acquittance for the rest of his money, we drew out some other implements, viz. Dice fixt for our purpose; as *High fallums*, which seldom run a y other chance then four, five, and six; *Low fallums*, which run, one, two, and three &c.

By these means we sent him home penniless and beggarly, whilst we drank healths to the confusion of Morrow.

## CHAP. XXII.

from hence he goes, by the direction of his Comrades, to a new fashion Rascally-house; he describes it, and relates his own success. He finds out his two Comrades (the Gamblers) and after some consultation had, they resolved to resume their quondam trade of Padding; are taken and committed to Newgate. He much condemns the follies of his past actions and in token of his unfeigned repentance, gives some general instructions to his Country men, first how to know Padders on the Road by infallible signs; with other remarks worth the observation of any Traveller, laid down in some consequent Chapters. What is to be taken heed unto before the Traveller begins his Journey, Instructions in what manner, at what time and what Road is most safe to ride. How a man is to behave himself if beset or surprised.

Upon the division we found each mans share to amount to 40 l. a piece. Being over joy'd at our first good success, we resolv'd to return thanks for our good fortunes in some private Meeting house, where we might have a Sister to assist in the carrying on the work of the day. The Devil in all Societies never wants his Factor, or one to solicit his business: For, I had no sooner intimaed my desires, but presently one of my Rope-breakers gave me information of a

Y 2

place

Place fit for that purpose, and that the like was not any where to be found. Being prickt on with the desire of Novelty, and to understand the curiosities therein, I went according to my directions solely; for company in such designs commonly frustrates expectations. They advised me when I came to the door, to pretend I came to enquire our lodgings: At the first, I verily thought my self abused by these Rogues, or mistaken in the house, when I saw a Porter standing at the door with his tipped staff: To undeceive my self, I confidently yet civilly askt him, whither there were any Lodgings to be let there? Yes Sir, ( said he ) which you may view if you will give your self the trouble of walking in. I had no sooner entered the door, but I was met by a grave Matron, who readily understood ( as I conceived ) my approach by her sentinels above in the Windows. Madam ( said I ) I am informed, that here are lodgings to be let. There is so, Sir, ( said she ) and with that conducted me into her parlor ( which was gallantly furnished ) there to take a stricter view of me, as to my person, but more especially my garb by which she might partly judge how well lined my pockets were. After the resolution of some trivial questions, for discourse sake, she was so well satisfied in me that she shewed me the way up one pair of stairs, into a very large and fair Dining-room hung with rich Tapestry, and adorned round with excellent Pictures, the Effigies of divers Ladies ( as I took them to be ) renowned and celebrated in all ages, for the fairest and most beautiful of that Sex. A servant brought us up, immediately after our entry into that room, a bottle of sack without any order given, as I could perceive; out of which the old Gentlewoman drank to me, expressing my welcome. For want of other discourse ( as I thought ) because we were both silent for a while,



I was contemplating her face, in which I could then still the goodly ruines of a beautiful and handsome countenance; Sir, said she, as you are a Gentleman, you may have some knowledge in that noble Art of painting, since for its excellency it is in these our days and hath been in most ages much studied by the generality of this Nation: wherefore, your judgment, Sir, which of all these Pictures is best drawn, or according to the rules of Physiognomy, hath the best features? Adam, said I, I shall freely give you my judgment; which is, This, in my opinion, (pointing at one) for she hath a full large front, her arched eye brows thick and black, without any straggling hairs; her eyes are of the same colour, and by their intuitive faculty seem to penetrate that which they look on; passing her cheeks, which carry in them an excellent air, and her nose, which is neither too long nor too short, view her lips, whose plumpness and redness resemble a double Cherry; and then for the dimples in her cheeks and chin, I could make them the subject of an whole days discourse: what might be said more of this representation I shall wave, wishing my self no greater happiness, then to discourse the rest with the real substance, which is not impossible, Sir, if you can have but the faith to believe your own eyes; and so instantly thereupon withdrew her self, leaving me amazed at what I had already seen, my heart the mean time beating an alarm to my passions, to be all in readiness at the approach of this Celestial Creature. Hearing a rustling of Silks, I drew my eyes off the Picture, and looking towards the door, there I saw enter an Angel; for I could not believe there could be so much perfection in any one mortal: with profound reverence I stood at a distance, admiring or rather adoring her person, till she smilingly and familiarly desired me to sit down. Be-

ing come to my self, I could talke to her; and in half an hour, confidence had posselt her ancient seat in me. It will not only take up too much time, but also offend the eares of the modest Reader, here to insert what Discourses we had; therefore I wave them, and come to the conclusion. Sir, said she, I question not but that you are acquainted with the cuttoms of the House. I protested to her, I was altogether ignorant. Why, you know that you may call for what Wine you please, not exceeding four Bottles; and if you please to eat, you shall have some choice bit suitable to the season, &c. if you stay not all night, your expence shall be but forty shillings, and you shall have to boot, the enjoyment of a Mistress besides: but if you stay all night, then thus must you do (and with that drew forth ten pieces of Gold) whether you fancy me or any else, that matters not, you must deposit before you go to bed ten pound, laying it underneath your head, and for every kisse, &c. take a piece back again, and if you draw in this manner all your own stake, you may next day be dismiss with a great deal of applause, without expending a penny, but what you shall be pleased to distribute voluntarily among the servants. I was stark mad to be at it, and so impatient, that I presently told out ten pieces. Telling my money the next morning, I found I had eight pound of my ten, but I deserved to have my mony trebled: however, for the present, I thought forty shillings was never better spent, nor husbanded with so much recreation and delight.

By her I understood what manner of cattel they were that frequented that house, though prostitutes and free booters, yet such as scorned a piece of Country-curt: some whereof, were persons of no mean quality which came thither to satisfy (what was impossible

to do ) to entertain lusts, and therefore enacted that Law or custom of depolishing ten pieces, meerly to induce such who were confident of themselves to make trial of their skill for the lucre of gain; and to the intent that it might not be discovered, either by their Husbands, or such relations or friends that had received causes of jealousy, they had their peeping holes, where they might plainly and fully see such who came upon the like accounts. If the Gentleman was unknown to that Gentlewoman whose Picture he elected to bear her company that night, she with much freedom would appear, and tender her self as the Subject of his pleasure; otherwise abscond her self. If so, and the Gentleman press hard for the sight of her the picture represented, why then Madam Bawd finds some excuse or other, as that picture she bought casually at second-hand as she past through *Long Lane*, or that it was the gift of some friend of hers: with many other fictions, meerly to make him desist from the pursuance of his desires.

Being very much pleased in the satisfaction of my fancy, I took my leave, not without some acknowledgement thereof, in these consequent lines.

*What is a Bawdy-house? I fain would know:*

*It is a thing appears so by the show.*

*Is that a Brothel, or an house of State,*

*Where Tip Staff Porters do attend the Gait?*

*This was a Stately house and yet was such;*

*In stately houses Ladies take a touch.*

*It must be so, the have little else to do,*

*Then study how to answer those that woo.*

*Such pamper'd flesh must yield, and few gain say;*

*Their own lusts motions, but with formal nays;*

*Rather then want that satisfaction, most*

stick not to purchase it, though at the cost  
 Of health and wealth, delighting thus in sence,  
 They never think too much the recompence.  
 Why should they then fond souls rail at an Whore,  
 Since they themselves are on that very score?  
 And damn all Brothels too, to Hell; but stay  
 What house is not a Brothel-house, I pray?  
 As any I've seen, with this none can compare;  
 A new Exchange, where Ladies sell their wares  
 To none; they scorn thereon to set a price,  
 But leave it solely to the Chapmans choice:  
 Here by a female Council 'twas jug'd fit,  
 He that reaps pleasure here, must pay for it;  
 Not with his purse, so much as brawny back,  
 Solely affecting such who holds them tack:  
 And to provoke men on, no want of wine;  
 Nay, all delights do here in one combine  
 To raise mens fancy that he may do o're  
 That thing he d. d but even then before.  
 Her rose dimpled cheeks, vermillion hips.  
 Did bluſk to see her ivory thighs and hips:  
 Her round soft belly swell'd with pride, for lo!  
 Like a small Hill 'twas over spread with snow:  
 Let but a warm hand touch it, and it will  
 Its moisture into pearly drops distil.  
 We kiss and parted, I sigh'd, she did sob;  
 And for her lusty Lad, I for my Mob.

From this House of pleasure, ( where I must ingeniously  
 confess I never received more for so little ex-  
 pence ) I went in search of my two Gamblers whom  
 actually I met: The next Tavern was our Council-  
 chamber, where wine was the dictator. We there un-  
 animously concluded, it was a thing beneath us to  
 pick up here and there Crowns or Angels, but resol-  
 ved

ed on Have at all, knowing that a five hours adventure might make us possessors of 500 l. With this resolution we went and bought us horses, with all things requisite for our intended expedition: being all ready and well prepared, we took our leave of *London* for a while; we had not rid above fifteen miles, but we bairned: the Hostler knowing me, and what designs I had formerly been upon, and imagining I was steering the same course, whispered me in the ear, that he had a desire to speak with me instantly: taking my opportunity under the pretence of looking to my horse, he informed me; that there were three within drinking, that on the next morning would travel such a Road, and that they had a great charge with them. I thank him bidding him come to my Chamber at night, where I would discourse farther with him. Then he gave me a summary account of all; and after a smart drinking bout, with promises to him of reward if we prospered, we betook our selves to our rest: in the morning very early we called for our horses, and rid in that very Road through which those three Travellers were to pass, where we planted our selves very conveniently: about three hours after, we could discern them at a distance; by that time we had made our selves ready, they were at hand: just at the bottom of a small hill we bid them stand; they askt us to what intent: We told them, that we were younger Brothers, and wanted money, and therefore must borrow some of them. With that, they all in an instant drew their swords; being not unprovided with Pocket-Pistols, we fired at them, and they again at us: we were all at level eyes, and very equally matcht; the second shot kill'd my Horse, and a fourth bereaved my Consort of life; the third Rogue ran away: being in a labyrinth of perplexity, I thought it the best way to sell my life at

at as dear a rate as I could ( knowing very well, that if I were taken I should be hanged. ) I fought with my Sword as long as I could stand upon my legs, wounding both them and their horses; but at last one unhappily ran me through the sword hand, and thereupon I was disarm'd. I was carried by them before the next Justice of Peace, whom they enquired out, and by a *Mittimus* was committed. I could not now expect any thing but death: but the next news I heard was, that I must be removed to Newgate, there being other things to be alleadged to my Charge. I was mounted again, in order to my removal, but very ill hors'd, being Bound thereunto and pinnion'd. My greatest grief ( when I came to London Streets ) was to hear the various discants of the good women on me; some saying, What a pitty it is such an handsome young man should come to the Gallows so soon? Others judg'd I had deserved it, otherwise I should not have rid to Town in that posture pinnion'd, and so attended with a guard.

As soon as the Keeper saw me, leaping for joy, O Sir, are you come again? we will take care that you shall not be any more annoyed with sinells proceeding from the Vault; and so without more ado, laid as much iron on me, as there is in some Smiths shops, and confin'd me close Prisoner to the Dungeon.

*Which made me curse those acts the fates have done,  
To cause a setting ere a rising Sun:  
But since my doom is now decreed by Fate,  
I must indur't, repentance is too late*

Being in this terrestrial Hell, ( where darkness horror and despair surrounded me ) my conscience started

out



out of her dead sleep, and presently demanded of me a severe account of what I had done, My guilt was such I had not a word to speak for my self, but wished my production (as my actions were) inhumane. What did not then the apprehension of an approaching and unavoidable death, suggest to my thoughts? to have only dyed (though with the most exquisite, terrifying, and Soul-excruciating tortures) was not a thing the spirit of man should shrink at; but the consideration of an eternal punishment hereafter, Justly inflicted on such who have offended an infinite God, absolutely distracted me: So that methoughts, I already heard the howls and hollow groans of damned Souls, which add to the weight of their everlasting misery. Having some what appeased my enraged conscience by a faithful promise and constant resolution to lead a new life, if I should escape the danger of the Law, I determined with my self, to shew the first Fruits of my reformation, by publishing something to the world that might serve as a guide for Travellers, how they might pass in safety on this way. To that purpose I acquainted my Keeper with my good intentions, but that being no particular profit to him, he valued not the publick, and therefore rejected my good motion, till I gave him his fist, and then I had the accommodation of a Candle, Pen, Ink and paper, &c The uncertainty of their attire, various diseases, non consistency of residence, and changeable names, makes me incapable to do what I would: Therefore I will do what I can (according to my small experience, occasioned by my no long continuance among them.) Riding on the Road (if you have company) it may be two or three shall overtake you, and seem to be much afraid of you: they will pretend even now to be set upon by half a dozen stout fellows, but that they did beat the Rogues,

forcing

forcing them to fly for safety: and this fiction they use to seal with basket-hill oaths: thus by your anwers they will finde whether you dare fight; if not, they will wait an opportunity to set their Roguery on you; which having done, as a reward for what unwillingly you have left them, they will pretend to give you a word shall protect you better than your sword. from any injury shall be done you upon the like account: but this is nothing else than a meer cheat, and no securing charm; for we valued not words, when our wants were in pursuit of Monies. Not but that we used some formal words among our selves, when ready to seize a prize; and observing other company either before or behind, to desist a while, by which we knew what we had to do, and the ignorant Travellers suspected no wrong.

Most respected Country men, and more especially you, who frequently pass the Road, the most part of my notorious wicked life having been consumed in all manner of cheats and debauchery, and that in part of late maintained by robbing: seeing now the wretchedness of that course of life, and being sensible of the injury I have done my Country, I looked upon my self as bound to satisfy a debt I owe to you, to the utmost of my power, which reacheth to an act not more satisfactory, than good advice how to avoid those dangers which too many of late days have fallen into, since Danvers Plumes of Feathers came in fashion. First then, if you carry a charge about you, make it not known to any, and conceal the time of your departure in your own breast; for it is a custom no less common then indiscreet and foolish, among some sort of persons, to blaz abroad among their repared friends, the time of their intended journey: and vain-gloriously make them acquainted with what considerable sum they

they sh<sup>d</sup> carry with them; by which means the Son hath often times betrayed the Father, and one friend another, by informing or plotting with some of the P<sup>l</sup>ading society; the discoverer sharing (for giving notice of the prize) one quarter or more of the gain he betrays, when but for this foolish humour they had not been waylay'd. Again, have a special care, both of the Hostler, Chamberlain, and Host himself: the two first the Thief is sure to be bribe, and the last, in expectation of a share with them (as it is so ordered) or in hopes that the major part of what they get shall be profusely spent in his house gives them items where the booty lies. Especially be sure on the road to associate with none but such as you finde inclined rather to leave your company then keep it; for they are very suspicious persons, and oftentimes prove dangerous, that press into your Society, and are very inquisitive to know whither you intend, spinning out the time with many impertinent questions. But if you would know whither the strangers intentions be honestly inclined, take occasion to make him stay; observe you in the mean time their motion: for if they make an halt or alight, so that you may overtake them, follow at a distance; but if their pace be so slow that you needs must overtake them, look about you, and provide for your safety, for there is no surer symptom of an Highway-man than such purposed delays. The other usual marks of such Maths be these; they commonly throw a great Leaguer-cloak over their shoulders, covering their face, or else they have visibly disguised their faces in some manner or other. Now of late they finde very useful a Vizard in every respect (but for the largeness) like the *a la mode* Vizard-masks so much worn by Gentlewoman, who endeavour to conceal the shame of their wanton actions by absconding their faces. If you meet with any who have none of these things,

as soon as they come somewhat near you, fix your eye full in their face: if they turn their heads from you keep your distance, and ride from them with what expedition you can; but being surprized by any you know, be very careful you discover it not to them; for these Desperados never think themselves secure, till they have prevented your giving intelligence, by cutting asunder the thread of your life. Observe whether their beards and hair of their head agree in a colour, and are not counterfeit: and beware to beware of him that rides in a Mountain cap, and of such as whisper oft; or of any one single person that intrudes into your company; for that is one way they have to recognise the Traveller: he will tell you a great many merry and facetious stories merely to ingratiate himself with you; which having obtained, he shews himself more than ordinary civil, and so fearful of any thing that may prejudice his new acquaintance, that he no sooner spies two riding toward them, but he apparently trembles, and will presently question his new friends, what charge they have about them: if little, the best way were to yield to these approaching persons, if Thieves, rather than hazard a life; but if it be any thing considerable, he will presently vow to be true to them, and rather than they should come to any danger or loss, he will fight with them as long as he hath breath. These so causlessly suspected, were perhaps downright honest fellows: but before they have travelled five miles further, 'tis ten to one but they overtake two or three more, one it may be riding aside with twigs of Hay instead of Boors, it may be with a Fork, Bill, or Goad in his hand, like a Country-Boor. It may be your newly entertained treacherous Friend will tell you that he will make good sport with this Country-Bumpkin, and so to that purpose ask him

some

Some foolish impertinent question, which the other shall answer as ridiculously, so spinning out the time till a convenient place and a fit opportunity serve; when shall this pretended friend seize one of you himself, and my Hodge-creeper turn Hucker, and lay hold on another: and now will it be in vain for you to strive, for nothing but money will ransom you out of their hands.

There are so many ways to rob the innocent, that it behoveth every man to be very circumspect, how when, and where he rides. If you have a quantity of money about you, chuse rather to ride by night than day; for by this means you are freed from any Horseman or Cutter whatever. But this course cannot seal your protection from base sheep-stealing penny Rogues, the baseness and low nels of whose spirits will stoop for a Noble, though they hang for their pains, therefore take heed of their long poles. and that they do not suddenly start out and lay hold on your bridle. As for the Nobler sort of Rogues, this they believe as an undesirable Maxime, that none will ride by night that are worth the robbing. Besides, they are oblig'd to take their Inn betimes, lest through mistrust they should be apprehended: Moreover, they hardly dare adventure in the dark, because they cannot discern what dangerous defences the assailed have, as Pistols, or other private Weapons in readiness, nor see their own advantages: and withal, it will be no difficult matter to convey in the obscurity of the night, what they have undiscovered, into some ditch. Chuse to Travel in by roads, for it is a General rule with Highway men, to keep their station on the greatest Roads, that of the number that pass by, they may select such as they think will prove the richest booties. Here now as a Corollary, take notice of a foolish custom:

Some

So when they ride by any place that commonly speaks danger, they will buddle up together side by side, which is the usual overthrow of such. Wherefore take my counsel here, when ere you ride, in fear especially, ride far asunder, at least a Stones throw; by so doing none durst set upon you, fearing lest this stragling order give some leave to escape undoubtedly, and so raise the country in their pursuit.

When the Rogue bids you stand, look not about as if amazed, or hoping for a rescue, for this doth but encourage them to the height of resolution and expectation: but looking sternly, as if fear were a stranger to you, making your brow the throne of rage and fury draw, and undauntedly tell them, that though you have but little, yet you would willingly Sacrifice your life rather than lose a penny; and add ten more to it (if you had them) then have your reputation stained with cowardise. This is the readiest and most certain way to save both your money and credit; for they fighting with a guilty conscience within and without against a Country, Law, and Justice, if nobly a man resists (this I know experimentally) the stoutest and most undaunted, and highest Spirit of them all will stoop to discouragement. Some I have known, that durst out brave the roaring Cannon to the mouth, yet their courages had found an alteration, when on this account they have met with a bold and nobly resolved Antagonist: but if by your own negligence, and the malevolency of fortune, the pleasure of your journey is eclipsed and clouded by a sudden surprisal, and that you see no hopes but that you must yield, be not so unwise to strive when it is too late, but give them the best words you can, and rack your wits to please their ear, most devoutly wishing you had more money to supply their present occasions; and so banishing all dejectedness



restedness from your looks, deliver some, and so perhaps they will let you pass without further search. If they make a second offer, yield freely to it: then it may be they will lift you soundly; never in that time lay your hand near your Money, and seeming fearless, it will be a means to make their suspicion of a greater sum to vanish.

This I have known my selfe that when I have taken so much as pleased me well, by mens fear I have had grounds to think that they had more, and so made me re-search; laying my hand but near the Place where they had concealed the rest, suddenly would they cry out, that they were undone, when as yet I had found nothing; but by this their foolish and indiscreet carriage I have found the remainder, which otherwise might have been secure and safe from me.

Z

CHAP.

## CHAP. XXV.

*Directions, if robbed, how to follow the Thieves ; which way to set Hue and Cry after them ; how to consist and where to find them. Cordial advice, and infallible instructions for the Inn-keeper, how to know Thieves from his honest Guests. He receives a sentence of condemnation ; he thereupon seriously contemplates death and considers Eternity. Being on board he descant on his ensuing misery ; yet draws Comfort to himself from the sufferings of others. He relates how he was freed from his intended banishment by a double Shipwreck ; the manner thereof he amply declares.*

**I**F you are robbed, there is no help but to endeavour to surprize the Thieves by a strict pursuit : Therefore let no Remora or delay deter you from obtaining your wish, and so seize them that so lately seized you. In the first place, scowre the next Road, not straight before, but either on the right-hand or the left ; for they know Hue and Cries never cross the passages, but go straight along. If in so doing you miss them, then conclude they are sheltered in some Inn which you have past, and therefore you must set some careful Spies, with a sufficient assistance near at hand, and be confident you will see them come that way, without the least apprehension of fear, or fear of apprehension. But this observe, that if they light of any considerable sum, then do they ride that night to their general Rendezvous.

devious in *London*, which is too sure a shelter for them: but observably take notice, for here is as eminent an example of their subtilty, as any ever the Devil enrich'd their knowledge with; For, if you are robbed in the eastern quarter, pursue them not in the direct Road to *London* with *Hue and Cry*, for by some other way they are fled; but haste to the City, and in *Westminster*, *Holborn*, the *Strand*, and *Covent Garden* search speedily, for there they are. If Northward they light on you, then to *South wark*, the *Bakside*, or *Lambeth* they are gone; and when you find any one seize all with him, for they are all Companions that are together.

Merthinks the many Tragical examples of Inn-keepers, who have harboured and countenanced Thieves were Sufficient (I should think) to deter those that survive from doing the like; wherefore my advice to them in generall is, that their chiefest care be, not to wink at any such life-destroying actions for hope of gain, lest that Sweet be imbittered by future trouble and disgrace. That you may know them, observe these Rules: First, they are extraordinary curious about their horses; they will have them as strangely dress'd, as strangely fed, with Mashes, Bread, Flesh, and mingled provender, and that in an unusual quantitie. If any wonder at the extraordinary feeding of their horses, they will endeavour to palliate their design therein, by telling that their tricks and good abilities deserve it: nay, sometimes they will boast, that their worthy services will soon repay the cost, using the like dark words to that effect, which are palpable grounds for suspicion. It is their custom likewise, to ask, Whose horse is that? or, What is the owner thereof standing by? of what function or quality? whither he intends to travel? how far, and when? Observe a-

gain that their Cloak-bags are for the most part empty carrying them only but to make a shew. Next, the Chamberlain conducting them to their Chamber, he is presently dismiss; but let him hearken, and if they are High way men, 'tis ten to one but they fall to share what they have purchased that day; and he shall see every one taking his dividend, as well as hear the money, if he but narrowly pry into the Chamber. Tis they never defer, lest he which hath the purse should cheat the rest. But above all, for their discovery, make this triall; Cause one to knock hastily at the gate, giving him instruction in the mean time that attends on them, to observe their carriage then, and he shall see them start and stare in each others face with gassy looks, being struck with fear and amazement: speak so that they may hear you, seemingly to some brother in the house, asking what Officers those are? what is their business? or whom do they look for? or the like. If they seem much affrighted bid them fear not for none shall search where they are, to offer them any injurie; and that they are as safe with him as in a well fortified Castle. By this means you may pry into their private thoughts and actions so far, as that you may gather, not only substantiall grounds for more then bare conjectures, but it may be they will confess something too, desiring your concealment and succour, and they shall think themselves forever ingaged: after this you may use your own discretion. Then again you may perceive by their loitering and disregard of time, what they expect; for they only bait but to observe what purchase they can see pass by; which when they have espied, they will pretend immediate business calls them to be gone, and so mount in great haste. Again when they come to an Inn to lodge, they commonly come in divided, or in severall Companies, frustrating the Host and

and Cry by their number : besides, if one part be surprized, the other may escape ; and when the residue comes in, they seem as strangers one to the other, enquiring of mine Host what their Companions are, what Country-men, whether he knows them ? and if they find he hath either jealousy or suspicion of any of them they will feign some business that necessitates their speedy departure : but if you take them for honest men, as they met by seeming chance in your Kitchen, (after some formal civil salutations, and drinking together they soon become acquainted, and before they part, show much familiarity.

Thus, as I was farther endeavouring to lay open their devices and deceits to repair what wrong my Country had sustained by me, word was brought me, that I must immediately appear at the Bar, and there answer what should be objected against me ; and it was but just that I should be now exposed to the Law of justice, since I had so often rejected and slighted the Law of Mercy.

Appearing at the Sessions, and seeing so many of my Adversaries ready to give in their evidence against me, I concluded my self a lost man ; my very countenance betrayed both my thoughts of guilt and despair. In short, I received sentence of death to be hanged at Tyburn by the neck till I was dead. I thought these sad tidings would have presently deprived me of my life, and so have saved the Hangman a labour. All the way I went back to Newgate, I fancied nothing but Gibbets stood in my way, and that I saw no other Trades but Cord-winders. Being entered the prison, I was forthwith put into the Dungeon, laden with shackles : I had not been many hours there, before a charitable Physician of the Soul, I mean a holy and pious Minister, came to visit me, who advised me to re-

pent, since it was high time; and endeavouring to disburden my conscience, by extracting from me a general ingenious confession of what enormous crimes I had committed. Finding this person to have no other design, but merely for my Souls sake, I dissected the actions of my whole life, not omitting any thing that might be accounted sinful. He was amazed to hear such notorious Roguery in one man, and so young; wherefore, before he applied any cordial, he administered his corrosives, and so thoroughly searched every corner of my heart, that there was nothing hid from him. In the first place, he made me sensible of the wickedness of my life, and that every, nay, the least evil action, deserved the loss of Eternal and inexpressible happiness, and instead thereof, torments everlasting and intolerable: It will take up too much time; to give an account of every thing this pious man alleged for my information, contrition and consolation: So stiff, stoutly and powerfully he delivered his divine Message, that the obduracy of my heart was able to hold out no longer, but melting into tears, was willing to have its sinfulness broken by the flame of Sacred Writ. Finding me in so good a temper, he left me to God and my self, for the perfecting of that work he had so hopefully and successfully begun. I began to consider what I was; only a statue of dust kneaded with tears, and mov'd by the hid engines of my restless passions; a cloud of earth, which the shortest Fever can burn to ashes, and the least shower of repentance wash away to nothing; and yet I made as great a noise in the World, as if both the Globes (those glorious Twins) had been unwombed from that formless Chaos, by the Midwifery of my Wit: all my actions were attended with so much success and so answerable to my desires, as if I had been one of heavens privy-Counsellors; which



which swelled me up with so much arrogance, that I spake thunder, lookt lightning, and breahed destruction; and by the eloquence of my own vanity, I perswaded my self, that the machinations of my brain were able to unhinge the Poles: but it is otherwise decreed, that the Ministers of Justice should put a period to my boundless pride, to make me know I am but a man, and that mortal too. And having but a short time to live, I thought it very requisite to think of that which must shortly be the means to convey me either to bliss or woe; by so doing, I seized on death before it seized on me. It was the finest Subject I could busie my soul about; for what more heavenly, than the thought of immortality? and what so necessary as the thought of death? Seneca saith, *When he was a young man, he studied to live well; when aged, how to dye well*: but I never practised *Artem bene vivendi*, and therefore am so ignorant in *Arte bene moriendi*; which makes me so fearful, that I know not how to be careful of not being found unprepared. Methinks I already hear that doleful saying, *See imparate in paratam*. My sole companions where now despair and fear, for the King of fear is death; and indeed there is nothing absolutely fearful, but what tends to death, and I am confident the fear of death is worse then the pains of death: for, fear of death kills us often, whereas death it self can do it but once. Life would not be troubled with too much care, nor death with too much fear, because fears betray, and cares disorder those succours which reason would afford to both: and though some say, he is more sorrowfull than is necessary, that is sorrowful before there is necessity; yet that soul cannot be in a good condition, so long as it fears to think of dying; but did I not sorrow now, and justly fear that messenger that must bring me before the Tribunal of Heaven, I should

have too little time to wash away so many black spots especially having nothing but objects of terror and amazement before mine eyes; but I never needed have feared what I should suffer when dead, if I had not deserved it whilst I lived. Life is not a like to all men. To such a wicked wretch as I am, the best had been that I never had been, and the next best were to live long; in this condition, it was all for me that I was born worse for me that I must die: for without unfeigned repentance, this dying life will bring me to a living death; whereas a good man is otherwise rewarded he counts his end the best of his being: for that brings him to the fruition of his hope: could Death end misery, it should be the greatest happiness I would wish that my conscience will not let me live, for I fear the end of my present miseries will be but the beginning of worse; yes, such as death it self cannot terminate. Now came into my minde the consideration of Eternity; and with it, I remembered how it was represented by the Ancients, which very much help my contemplation; which was thus: A vast Den full of horrors round about which a Serpent windes it self, and in the winding bites it self by the tail. At the right hand of this Den, stands a young man of a most beautiful and pleasant countenance, holding in his right hand a Bow and two Arrows, and in his left a Harp. In the chaire sits an old man opposite, and having his eyes very bright on his Table Book, writes according to the words of the young man, standing by. At the left hand of this Den, sits a Grave-Matt in gray head-cloth, and having her eyes always closed. At the mouth of the Den, are three stairs ascending by degrees; the first is of Iron, the second of Brass, the third of Silver and the last of Gold. On these are three Children sporting up and down, Playing, scarlets, and inapprehensive

re of falling: The sight of this Emblem of Eternity  
 calculated into my thoughts (this interpretation: The  
 Den, which was bottomless, signified to me the incom-  
 prehensibility of Eternity, the circumferring Serpent,  
 Time; the young man, Nature / on Earth and Hell  
 her arrows failed; but in Heaven there is the Harp,  
 pines of joy, and pleasures inexpressible: The Old  
 man I look upon to be Fate; the grave Mayron, Dr. Vi-  
 erce; the Stairs, different Times and Ages; the Chil-  
 dren running up and down the Stairs without fear of  
 danger, do signify foolish man and Woman, who for-  
 get the end of their Salvation, sport and play with it fo-  
 ring, till they slip into Eternity. So have been ear-  
 nis of that which should have been my great grief,  
 though I knew (but would not know) it at the last  
 brightest touch of death were sufficient, in a moment  
 to translate from Time to Eternity. We are all to  
 live a thousand years (whereas the Executioner is to  
 tempered to my life in one day longer) we should  
 forewell at random all our course, in our very con-  
 sideration of our resurrection and newness of life.  
 Now, now is the time, every hour, every moment;  
 now one part of an hour (as I am informed to my  
 year's comfort) may obtain pardon here, which all E-  
 ternity cannot hereafter. Therefore, let this now be  
 my time (this one day I have left me) to confess my  
 debts and trespasses against Heaven, which I can never  
 pay in Hell-fire, in all the years and times to come  
 hereafter. Let such who have liv'd (as I) in all man-  
 ner of wickedness, consider what Eternity is; which  
 may make them return like the penitente Prodigal.  
 What then is Eternity? It is a Circle running back on  
 itself, whose center is every where, and circumference  
 nowhere; that is to say, it finis: It is an O but  
 with neither beginning nor ending: Or it is a wheel,  
 which

*Voluitur & voluitur in omne volubilis a vultu.*

A Wheel that turns, a Wheel that turned ever :

A Wheel that turns, and will leave turning never.

Eternity is like a year, continually wheeling about which turns again to the same point from whence it began and still wheels about again. It is an ever-running Fountain, whither the waters after many runnings flow back again, that they may always flow. It is a bottomless pit, whose revolutions are endless. It may be compared to a snake bowed back unto it self circularly, holding its tayl in its mouth ; which in its end doth again begin, and never ceaseth to begin. What is Eternity ? it is a duration always present ; it is one perpetual day, which is not divided into that which is past, and that which is to come : Or, it is an age of ages, never expiring, and never changing : Or, more properly, it is a beginning continuing, never ending, always beginning, in which the blessed begin a blessed life, in which the damned always die, and after all death and struggling therewith, always begin again to die. As Hell torments are Eternall, so will the conscience be perpetually tormented with deep and horrid despair for the life past : Their worm shall not die. The Poets of old alluded to this place notably, in that Fiction or Fable of *Tytus*, whom *Virgil* feigneth, that a flying Vulture every day gnaws and tears his Liver, which is every night again repair'd and made up. Thus every day the Vulture may have more matter to prey upon. What is this Vulture, but the worm / speak of ? and what is his Liver, but the conscience always gnawn and tormented ? Not only this ( as he that preacht my Funerall-Sermon told me ) but all the torments of the damned shall never have end, because there can be no peace or satisfaction : For a though these are

expressible

expressible torments shall continue many millions of years ; yet shall there not one hour, no, nor one minute of respite be granted : Let us then be no longer forgetful of our selves, and so degenerate into beasts but seriously to consider our end, and what shall come after. All men are in the way of Eternity, but I am now almost at my journey's end : I sit on the Stairs of Eternity, expecting when one small thrust shall plunge me into the bottomless pit, where one hour punishment shall be more grievous ( as *Thomas a Kempis* saith ) then a hundred years here in the bitterest of torments : There they are tortured for infinite millions of Ages and are so far from finding an end, as never to be able to hope for any end. The consideration of these things brought me to that pass, as I was content to suffer any thing in this life, so that I might not suffer in the life to come. Though a King, I should willingly and patiently have endured what *Andronicus* did, Emperor of the East ; who ( as History relates ) being overcome and taken prisoner by *Isaac Angelo*, had immediately two great chains of iron about his neck ; and being laden with fetters, was brought before *Isaac*, who delivered him over to the rage of the multitude, to be abused at their pleasure. This rabble being incensed and stimulated on by revenge, Some buffeted him, Some bastinado'd him, others pulled him by the beard, twisting the hair from his head, dashing out his teeth, dragging him in publick through the streets : the insolence of women was such, as to fall upon him, leaving the marks of their nails in his Imperial face. After all this, they cut off his right hand : thus maimed and bruised, he was thrown into the Dungeon of Thieves and Robbers, without either attendance, or the least thing necessary to sustain life : Some few days being past, they put out one of his eyes : thus mangled, they  
put

Put upon him an old ruff on the neck, thrust his head  
 up on a scabb'd Cane, with his face to vantage  
 the Tail, put on his head a Crown of Garlick, made  
 him hold in his hand the Cane's Tail instead of a Sep-  
 tor, and so they carried him through the Market-place  
 very leisurely, with great pomp and ruman. Here did  
 them an impudent crew, and base-smiling the people,  
 like Pyggers after an inhumble manner, all up and  
 not considering in the least, that not three days before  
 he was no less then an Emperour, crowned with a Royal  
 Diadem, whose frowns were inevitable death, was  
 honoured, yet, idol of all men. Their rage and in-  
 dignities fitted every one with instruments to execute their  
 revenge: Some struck him on the head with sticks, o-  
 thers thrust his nostrils with dirt, others squeezed found-  
 up upon his face forked inhumane and bestial excre-  
 ments; some threw stones, others dirt at him. An im-  
 pudent woman as he past, came running out with scald-  
 ing water in her hand, and poured it on his head. All  
 these indignities which they exercised upon this poor  
 Emperor, did not satisfy their insatiate revenge, but  
 bringing him to the Theatre, took him down from the  
 Cane, and hung him up by the heels; yet did he be-  
 have himself like a man, by bearing patiently what was  
 done upon him, being never heard to cry out against  
 the cruelty of his fate. All that he was heard to say  
 was this, which he often repeated, *Domine miserere*,  
*Domine miserere*. Thus hanging up, one would have  
 thought their malice should have ceased; but they spent  
 not a long while as he lived; for pulling his Cane  
 from his body, they tore him with their nails. One  
 received him the rest, ran his Sword through his  
 back as he was hanging. Two others, to say whose  
 sword was sharpest, cut him and go out him in several  
 places, but so ended his life miserably, but not  
 tutored



Wish red to be buried. Oh, that my condition were as *Andronicus*, to suffer all that man can lay upon me, that I might not perish for ever: I would be content to be miserable for so short a time, that I may not be miserable to all Eternity. Questionless he could never have suffer'd such things so constantly and courageously but that he had Eternity in his thoughts; and were our minds employed about the same subject, and adversity or affliction we should more easily bear. From the time of my condemnation till Monday morning I slept not, neither did I eat or drink: then did I hear my passing Bell (having heard the day before my Funeral-Sermon) every stroke methought carried my soul one degree higher, being confident I had made my peace above. Whilst I was in the depth of Meditation, and my soul breathing out this short ejaculation.

*Is there no hope now of Relief,*

*In this Extremity?*

*Mercy e're now hath sav'd a Thief,*

*And may do as much for me.*

Behold, a friend came to visit me (that never visited me during my imprisonment) but now in the time of need brought me a Reprieve: when I lookt thereon at first, I could not believe my own eyes; I thought I Dreamt, or that grief had so distracted me as that I imagin'd things that are not. My friend at length clear'd up my doubts; but I shall tell you this for a truth, I knew not whether I were best accept of this self preserving courtesie, for methought I had so well settled my eternal concerns, as that I had nothing else to do but die. About a fortnight after, I was sent aboard, in order to my transportation; my sentence of death was converted into a 7 years banishment.

The

The Ship that was to transport me lay at Wellidge about the latter end of August 1650. I was convey'd aboard a lusty Ship, a Virginia-Merchant-man, and was instantly clapt under hatches, but I knew they would quickly call me a lost, if there was any fighting work; as such a thing might easily be, since the Sea was no where free from such as would make a prize of what Vessels were too weak to contend with them. Having pen, Ink, and paper about me, I busied my thoughts and pen in contriving consolation for my disquieted and disconsolate mind, thus:

Why should not I with patience suffer? some  
Have kiss what brought them to their Martyrdom.  
Many a Saint hath suffer'd on a Cross;  
And our good King endur'd three Kingdoms loss.  
Shall I (fool) then at any cross take grief?  
Tyburn's the way to heaven for many a Thief.  
But must I now to Sea? well 'tis no matter;  
Fortune now frowns, though heretofore did flatter.  
Let not my soul despond, since 'tis my hap,  
I'll scorn that Whore, and trust to Thetis lap:  
Though she may foam with anger, and the wind  
May aggravate her passion, I may find  
Her calm again, and see me on that shore,  
Where I may moor, and put to sea no more.  
Neptune may shake his Trident, and each wave,  
Or crumbling billow may become my grave.  
A thundering Cannon may pronounce my death,  
Or a small shot bereave me of my breath:  
All which may throng together in full crowds,  
To make me a winding sheet of Tatter'd shrouds.  
The wind shall sing my requiem, and my knell.  
Shall be a piece of Ordnance, that shall tell

*My angry fate: I'm dead, and the Sea must  
Intomb without the form of dust so dust.  
But I hope better things and do believe,  
My good events will make the turcs grieve.]*

About the beginning of September following, we set  
sail for the Downs. As soon as we had weighed An-  
chor, a thick melancholy cloud encompassed my  
thoughts, and so much sadness seized my Spirits, as if  
I had been not so much taking my leave of my dearly  
beloved country, as leaving the world, though my soul  
could not foresee the least danger, nor be troubled at  
the apprehension of what slavery I was to undergo in  
my exilement; yet certainly I found this strange an-  
guish and passion to be ominous, proceeding from  
some thing divine, which is able to unriddle the Appo-  
crypha of nature, and made my Soul sensible of some  
approaching mischief. Having been about five days at  
Sea, one morning, just as the Sun began to gild our  
Hemisphere with his Golden rays, the Boatswain made  
us all turn out, and commanded all hands upon deck;  
coming a loft, I could not see a man in whose face there  
was not written the pale characters of fear and amaze-  
ment; which were the infallible marks of some sudden  
and ensuing danger. Upon my first coming on board,  
I could discern a great many red-nos'd fellows (a  
drunkards trust indiscreet) but the apprehension of pre-  
sent danger had now extinguish'd all those flaming  
torches of their faces, without the help of water: The  
faces indeed of the stoutest amongst us, were so altered  
by this affrightment, that we knew not almost one an-  
other; losing our natural complexions through the ex-  
tremity of passions. One was at his prayers, that never  
till then knew what a prayer was; another shedding of  
briny tears, to make room for more salt waters: for my  
pa.

own part, I found my self not much moved, having lately made my self acquainted with death. By this time I understood what had past; that is, our ship had sprung a leak, and was ready to sink. Seeing every man in that posture, and that there required means as well as prayers, for our preservation; Corae (said Gentleman) let us not thus cry out, and never lend our assisting hands; let us to the pump, and let every one be employed in this Grand concern. Whereupon we all unanimously fell to work; but as it is usual in such extremities, we were all busie about doing of nothing; what we began we left imperfect, and fell to another, and so perfected nothing to our safety. Some were sent down into the Hold, who quickly returned to us with the Symptoms of death in their countenances; for they all with hesitations and quivering of Tongue, with words abruptly or half spoken, signified to us, that our Ships wound was incurable, that the leak could not be stoppt, but that we must inevitably perish within some minutes. These words I received as from a Deaths head, which I never heard speak before; and truly his very looks would have sufficiently declared what message he was about to deliver, viz. mine and immediate destruction. Our inexpressible fears bereaved us of the power of counselling one another; neither did we know what was best to be done. Our Master commanded our Long-boat to be cast out, and withal, ordered some eight Guns to be fired, which methought resembled so many toles of my Passing bell, when I was delig'd to pass by St. Sepulchres Church in a Carr, guarded by fellows whose visages were the true resemblance of the *Saracens head on Snow hill* for terror, horour, and merciless proceeding; as to all which, these *Canibals* will outvie that inhumane and bloody Nation. Every man indeavoured to shift for himself

himself, and I amongst the rest ( being loat' to be drowned alone ) leapt short of the Boat, and fell into the Sea in *Charontis Cymba*; but necessity then forcing me to use treble dilligence to recover my self, with much difficulty I got into the Boat : I was no sooner there but another leapt down upon me, and had like to have beaten the rest of my breath out of my body : which I took kindly enough ; for I would have been content to have born them all on my back, nay, boat and all so that I might have escaped with life. We were constrained to leave many of our friends behind us, and committed our seles to the Sea, driving us we knew not whither. Now were all our hopes dashed, as well as our selves, by the waves ; for we were almost in dispair of humane help for we were left in the wide Ocean, which did not at that time wear a smooth brow, but contending with the Wind, swell'd into prodigious mountains, which every Moment threatned our over whelming. How could we expect safety in an open Shaloup, when so stately a Castle of Wood, which we but now lost, could not defend it self, nor pre erve us from the insolency of the imperious waves ? We were many Leagues from any shore, having neither Compass to guide us, nor provision to sustain us, being as well starved with cold as hunger. Several bags of mony we had with us ; but what good could that do us, where there is no exchange ? We could neither eat nor drink it ; neither would it keep us warm, nor purchase our deliverance. Therefore we may justly esteem of money in its own nature, as an impotent creature, a very cripple, *inutile pondus*, an useles burden. I could not now imagine any thing could preserve us, less then a miracle : and as we were all sinful creatures, especially my self, we could not expect that nature should go

353      *The English Rogue :*      Or,      Part.  
out of her ordinary way to save us. The waves  
deed carried us up to Heaven,

*Jam Jam tacturos sidera summa patet.*

*Neptune* sure at this time was very *game some*, for he  
play'd at *Tennis* with us poor Mortals, making  
wave his *Racket*, to bandie us up and down like *Balls*.  
Sometimes we seemed so proud and lofty, being rais'd  
so high, as if we had been about to scale Heaven,  
which the incensed Diety perceiving, seemed again to  
throw us down headlong to Hell, for too much ambi-  
tion and presumption : yet I could not see, but that  
the extremity of our condition pleaded for us, crying  
aloud for pity and compassion. I was now silent, com-  
mitting my self into the hands of providence ; yet ve-  
rily believing, that the inversion of the old Proverb  
appertained to me, that being not born to be hang'd,  
I should be drowned. Commonly we are not so much  
mov'd with a clamourous and importunate beggar,  
who hunts after our Alms with open mouth, and  
makes *Hue and Cry* after our Charity ( as if we had  
robbed him who begs of us ) as with the silence of im-  
potent *Lazarus*'s : their sores speak loudest to our af-  
fections ; *Quot vulnere, tot ora* ; each wound is a ga-  
ping mouth strenuously imploring mercy ; the sight  
whereof, cannot but melt the most obdurate spectator  
into a charitable compassion. This was our case, our  
misery was louder than our prayers, and our deplora-  
ble condition, certainly was more prevalent than  
our imperfect devotions. In this moment of death,  
when we were without the least expectation of any  
deliverance, the wind chopt about, and drove back  
one Ship that had over-run us : this was unquestion-  
ably *Digitus Dei*. This Ship made towards us, and



we, what in us lay, towards it : The wind blew hard and the insulting Sea, that will not admit of pity, rose high upon us : so that we were forced to lave the water out of the boat with our hats. It was my chance to sit on the weather side ; fain would I have exchanged my place, but such complements are useless in a storm, so that I was constrained to endure patiently the indignation of my raging enemy. But now began another despair ; for with all our endeavours we could not reach the Ship, nor she us, although she hung on the Lee to retard her course. Thus our pregnant hopes brought forth nothing but wind and water. (for the Ship rode on furiously before the wind, and we came after in pursuit of her, as slowly as if an hedge-hog had been running with a Race horse ; so that we which before flattered our selves with an assurance of safety, were as much confounded with a certainty of perishing. In my opinion it is better to have no hopes at all, than be disappointed in them : doubtless it did redouble the punishment of *Tantalus*, to touch what he could not taste. That Mariner, who seeing a fatal necessity for it, is contented to die in a tempest, would be exceedingly troubled to perish in a Haven, *Is Portugetre*. In this very condition were we, having a Ship near us, but could not board her for stress of weather ; so that ruin attended us, though all the while we lookt safety in the face. Now did it grow dark, whereby we could not see which way to row, though this was an evil in its own nature, yet accidentally it became our benefit : for not seeing our danger, we understood it not, but redoubling our strength, we brake through the waves, and by the assistance of a light, which was in the Ship, we directed our course truly ; and now did

we find we were very near her. As soon as we toucht her on the Lee side, the Sea-men, with the rest in the boat, being more dexterous in the art of climbing than my self, never regarding their *exil'd prisoner*, (whom they ought to have taken charge of) got all up into the Ship in a moment, leaving me alone in the boat. By good hap they threw me out a Rope, which once had like to have deprived me of my life, but was now the preserver: which I held fast, to keep the Boat from staving off. Our Boat was half full of water, and the waves dasht it so violently against the Ship-side, that every such stroke struck me down: so that I had like to have been drowned (and did much fear it) in that epitome of the Sea. It would have vexed a man in my condition, to escape by swimming over a large River, and coming ashore, to be drowned in a wash-bowle. At last with much difficulty I got aboard. The Master, Merchants, &c having sav'd their lives (even miraculously) one would have thought they should not have been so pensive as they were for the loss of their goods. Those which lost much took it very heavily; Those which lost less, their affliction was greater, having lost all: I was the most glad, having I lost nothing neither, could I any thing but my life. Having escap't so miraculously, it was unchristian like to murmur at any loss, and as ridiculous as if a man being restored to life, should complain that his winding-sheet had sustained some damage by lying in the grave. The Ship wherein we were was bound for the *Canaries*. The second night after our deliverance, about ten a clock, having set our Watch, we laid our selves down to rest, with the thoughts of much safety and security, but it was otherwise decreed; for a bou  
on

clock we were forced to use all hauds' aloft  
most terrible storm beginning to a rise, and the  
blew so furiously, that before morning we  
our Bow-sprit and Mizon: we durst not bear  
least sayl but let the Ship drive whither the  
ale and waves pleased; and before the next night  
could not indure ou remaining Masts standing  
were necessitated to cut them by the board,  
us we were tumbled up and down for four days  
as many nights, contending with the waves  
a pitch-battel not knowing where we were, till  
Ship struck so violently against a Rock, t at  
horrid noise thereof would have even male  
lead man startle to which, add the hideou cries  
the Sea men, bearing a part with the whi t  
g winds and roaring Sea all which together  
med to me to be the truest Representation of  
Day of judgement. The Ship stuck fast so  
g between two Rocks, as that we had time  
ough, all of us, to leap out; the only means left  
for our safety. We all got upon a Rock and  
Morning-star having drawn the Curtain  
the night, we found that we were a very little  
tance from the shore; getting thereon. and rang-  
g to and fro, we at last espied a small house, the  
ht whereof made us direct our foot steps thi-  
er, steering our course solely by the compass of  
ur eyes: being come to the house, the Master  
ereof stood at the door; we addrest our selves to  
in *English*, but his replications were in *Span sh*  
hich we understood not: wherefore I spake to him  
Latine, in which language he answered me, *Tam*  
*prompte, tam prompte*, both quaintly and readily.  
that tongue I made a shift to tell him the sad Iliades  
our misfortunes. This noble *Spaniard* understood

fortunes. This noble Spaniard understood it better by our looks than my relations; which made such a deep impression in his soul, that his gravity could not forbear the shedding of some few tears, so that one would have thought he suffered Ship-wrack as well as we. He desired us to come into his house, and refresh our selves: what little meat he had stew'd in a horse load of herbs with some pottage only seasoned by a piece of Bacon, that had served for that purpose at least a dozen times, he ordered to be set before us; being no ways sparing of his Wine, better than any I ever yet could taste in Taverns; this good man being not acquainted with *dashings*, *dulcifyings* &c. Seeing us eat so heartily, he caused another dish to be provided, which was composed of such variety of creatures, that I thought he had served us in as a *Mess*, the first Chapter of *Genesis*: This *Olapodrida* was so *cockt* that the distinction of each creature was *sau'd* out of our knowledge. Having satisfied our hungry stomachs, he dismiss'd all excepting my self, desiring me to accept of what kindness he could do me for he confest he took much pleasure in my society and discourse. I was very well contented to entertain his proffer: In some few days he told me he was to go to Sea, being Captain of a Vessel that lay in *Perumbana*, a small Sea-faring Town near the place of our Shipwreck: and asking me whither I would go with him to the *Indies* (whither he was bound) I readily consented and in some few days after we did sail from thence, to perfect our intended Voyage.

## CHAP XXVI.

*From Perimhana, a small maritime Town on the Spanish coast, he sets sail with Captaine Ferdinando Velasquez bound to the East-Indies: but by the way meets with three Turkish Gallies, and by them is taken, miserably abused, and imprisoned. He is brought forth into the market place, and there put to sale: he is bought by a Jew (a miserable envious man) and by a stratagem he delivers himself from that Master; is sold to a Grecian, in heart a Christian: the Ship being taken, and his Master drowned, he escaping 10 fathoms by swimming is at his own liberty. From hence he set sail to Swalley-Road and so from thence coasted till he arrived at Delin, a Town that belongs to the Malabars: he gives an account of what he there saw and observed.*

**A**N hour before day we left the port, and sailed along the coast before the wind; about noon we discerned three vessels, whereupon we gave them chase: in less than two hours we got up to them, and then we could easily perceive that they were Turkish Gallies; whereof we were no sooner assured, but we betook our selves to flight, making to Land with all speed possible, to avoid the danger that inevitably threatned us. The Turks understanding our design, presently hoisted up all their sails, and having the wind favourable, bore

up to us to close, & getting within a small Faul con-shot of us they discharged their Ordnance on us where with they killed eight of our men, and wounded as many more: and so battered our Ship beside, that we were forced to throw a great quantity of our lading over-board. The *Turks* in the mean while lost no time, but grappled us: we on the other side who were able to fight, knowing that on our valor and undaunted courage depended our lives, or loss of liberty, with perpetual slavery, resolved to fight it out with this determination we boarded their Admiral, doing very eminent execution; but being over powered with numbers, we were so overprest & wearied, that we desisted from making any further resistance: For, of 35 men we had at first we only had remaining ten, whereof two died the next day, whom the *Turks* caused to be cut in Pieces or quarters, which they hung at the end of their Main-yard for a sign of Victory. Being taken, we were carried by them to a Town called *Mecaa*, and received by the Governor and inhabitants, who expected and waited the coming of these pirates. in the company was likewise one of the chiefeft Sacerdotal dignity; and because he had been a little before in pilgrimage at the Temple of their prophet *Mahomet* in Meca, he was honoured and esteemed by all the people as a very holy man. This Mahometan impostor rid in a triumphant Chariot up and down the Town, covered all over with silk Tapistry, and with a deal of ceremonious fopperies, bestowed on the people his benediction as he passed along, exhorting them to return hearty thanks to their great prophet for this Victory obtained over us. The inhabitants hearing that we were Christians taken Captives, flockt about us: and being exceeding



ceedingly transported with choler, fell to beating of us in that cruel manner, that I thought it a vain thing to hope to escape alive out of their hands, and all this, because we owned the names of Christians. When I was in *England* I justly was sentenced to die for my villany, and now here only for the bare profession of Christianity, I must not be suffered to live. This wicked *Cecis* (as they called him) instigated them on to those outrages they committed; who made them believe, that the worse they dealt with us, the more favour and mercy they should receive from *Mahomet* hereafter. we were chained all together, and in that manner were waded in triumph; and as we past along, we had our heads waht with womens Rose-water, throwne down upon us from Belconies, with other filth, in derision and contempt of the name of Christians: wherein every one strived to be most forward, being instigated thereunto by their Priest, my sufferings then put me in mind of my former wishes, to be as unfortunate *Andronius*, miserbly afflicted here, that I might escape eternal Torments hereafter: I received in part the effect of my *quondum* wishes, no ways acceptable to my present desires. Having tired themselves in tormenting us till the evening, bound as we were they clapt us into the Dungeon. where we remained 21 days exposed to all kind of misery having no other provision allowed us, than a little Oat-meal or Rice and water, which was distributed to us every morning, what should serve us for that whole day: for variety sake, we had sometimes a small quantity of Pease soak'd in water.

In the morning the Goaler repairing to us, found two of our miserable companions dead, by reason of their wounds, which were many, and not look in;  
to

to. This made him haste to the *Guazil* or Judge to acquaint him of what had hapned; who upon information given, came to the Prison in person, attended with officers and other people: where having caused their Irons to be Struck off he ordered their bodies to be Dragged through the Town. and so cast in the Sea. We that remained were chained altogether, and so led out of Prison unto the common place of Sale, to be sold to him that should give most. By reason of my strength ( which those that look on might argue, from the streightness and firmness of my limbs, being elevated by the Pole above a common or middle Stature ) I was first bought by one, whom at the first sight, I could not well tell whether he was Man or Devil: for his complexion was of the same colour as the Devil is usually Rendred: to say all in short, he was a Jew. He carried me home to his House where I no sooner arrived, but he markt me for his own: My employment was constantly to turn a hand-mill: if I rested at any time, though ever so little, the punishment he inflicted on me was three or four blows on either the Belly or Soles of my feet: which were doubled or trebled according as he judged of my offence: my diet was such as only served to keep me alive. In general he used me so cruelly, that I become desperate, I once thought it better resolutely to cut the thread of my life, than spin it out longer in so much wretchedness and misery. Revenge too induc'd me to the undertaking of this attempt, as knowing him to be the most covetous wretch living, and therefore would even hang himself when he should lose what he paid for me: but considering my self, I made choice of a better expedient, which was to pretend ( what I intended not ) to kill my self: I

made

made choice of such a time, when I was sure some one or other was set to watch me; who perceiving that I was about to destroy my self, rusht in and prevented me, and went forthwith to inform my Master of what he had seen; advising him withall to sell me out of hand, otherwise he would infallibly be a loser by me. My Master taking notice of my countenance and behaviour, resolved to put his friends counsil in practice; and so sold me to another who fortunately proved a Greek, that in shew was a *Mahometan*, but cordially a Christian. Once more was I delivered from miseries that are hardly to be endured, and was imbarqued with my new Master in a Ship bound for the *East-Indies*. In the course that we held, we sail'd with so prosperous a gale, that in a very short time we arriv'd in view of the Port of *Diu*; but seeing severall Vessels lying before that Fort, firing against it in an hostile manner we shap'd our course to *Goa*, where we arriv'd in safety. From hence we sayled unto the River *Lugor*; just as we were entring its Mouth, we saw a great *Junk* coming upon us, which perceiving us to be few in number, and our Vessel but small, fell close with our prow on the Larboard-side, and then those that were in her, threw into us great Cramp-irons fastned unto two long chaines, wherewith they grappled us fast unto them; which they had no sooner done, but incontinently some 70 or 80 *Mahometans* started out from under the Hatches, that till then had lain lurking there; and poured out their small-shot upon us, clapt us a board in an instant. Those that new what it was to be a slave to the merciless *Turks*, leapt into the Sea, whereof I was one: we were not far from land, so that it was not long before I got safe to shore; it was my Masters misfortune

tune (and truly I think my unhappiness, for he behaved himself to me as one of his familiar friends) being wounded, & ignorant in swimming, to be entomb'd in the deep. There were some five or six more that escap'd the danger of their enemies and the Sea: that wading up to the waste in mud, landed in safety; with these I hid my selfe in the next adjacent wood. There was hardly one of us but received some hurts and being now depriv'd of all hope of help, we could not forbear to unman our selves by weeping, complaining against our hard destiny, that should in so short a time bring us into so sad a disaster. In this desolation we spent the remaining tragical part of the day; but considering with our selves, that the place was moorish, and full of venomous creatures, we betook our selves to the *Owze*, standing therein up to the middle. The next morning by break of day, we went along by the Riverside, untill we came to a Channel, which we durst not pass (not knowing its depth) for fear of *Lizards*, plenty whereof we had sight of there in we wandred so long to a void this and the Bogs covered with rushes which environed us about, till that we were forced to rest our selves, being so weary and so hungry, that we could not go one step farther. In the morning awaking, four of our company lay dead, so that there was only one remaining to bear me company: I now thought my condition worse than if I had hung at *Tyburn*, surrounded with a full Jury. of fellow-sufferers; my companion and I, with tears, sang the obsequies of our dead friends, expecting hourly our own dissolution. Their bodies we covered with a little earth as well as we could; for we were then so feeble, that we could hardly stir nay, nor speak. in this place we rested our selves, intending to beare our friends company to their eternal rest:

rest. Some four hours after this our resolution about Sun-set, we espi'd a Barque rowing up the river: coming near us we hailed her, and prostrating our selves on the ground, beseeched those that were in her to receive us on board. Amazed to see us in that posture on our bended knees, and hands lifted up to Heaven, they stopt our cries for succour reacht their eares, which obtained commiseration from their hearts; so taking us in, they carried us with them to *Lugor*, where about Noon next day we landed. The people are fearful Black like the Devil, whom they superstitiously worship, in the form of a bloody Dragon: they have many Idols amongst them which they hold in great esteem, as a Ram-goat, a Bat, an Owl, a Snake, or Dog, to whom they ceremoniously bow or kneel, grovling upon the Earth, and throwing dust on their faces they offer Rice, Roots, Herbs, and the like, which is devoured by the Witches: These devillish creatures being both feared and esteemed by the Savages. The female sex, against the appearing of the new-Moon, assemble upon a Mountain, where turning up their bare bums, they contemptuously defie the Queen of Heaven, who hath this despite shown her, because they suppose her the causer of their monthly courses. They are much given to novelties amongst which dogs are of great value with them: Insomuch, that whilst I was there, I saw six slaves exchanged for one *European* Cur. They abound with the choicest of natures blessings, as health strength, and Wealth, but are very inhumane & uncivil; for they love to feed on mans flesh, eating it with more satisfaction than any other food. Upon my first arrival I did not understand their meaning by feeling my flesh, but I was informed, that like Butchers, they felt how fat I was, they never toucht me after.



afterwards with their fingers, but I fancied my self either boiled or roasted, and that their hands my bearers, were conveying me to the open Sepulchres of their mouths, to be entomb'd in the gut-rumbling Monument of their bellies : whereas other Anthropophagi content their appetites with the flesh of their enemies, these cover most their friends, whom they imbowel with much greediness, saying, they can no way better express a true affection, then to incorporate their dearest friends and relations in themselves as in love before, now in body uniting two in one (in my opinion) a bloody sophistry. It is a very truth, of which I was an eye witness, They have shambles of men and Womens flesh, joynted and cut into severall pieces fit for dressing. It is usual for some, either weary of life, or so sick, they have no hopes of recovery, to proffer themselves to these inhumane Butchers, who returning them thanks, dissect or cut them out into small parcels and so are sodden and eaten. It is a custom among them, when they would add to their beauties (deformity) to slash their faces in several places. They adore those two glorious planets, the Sun and Moon, believing they live in Matrimony. They are much addicted to rapine and thievery, and they chuse to commit any Villany rather by day then night, because they suppose thereby the Moon and Stars will never give testimony against them. Their Leads are long, and their hair curled, seeming rather Wool than Hair : Their eares are very long being extended by ponderous bables they hang there, stretching the the holes to a great capacity. Both Men and Women hideously slash their flesh in sundry forms, their Brows Noses, Cheeks, Arms, Breasts, Back, Belly Thighs and Legs, are pin'd, and cut in more admire-



able (than amiable) manner. They contemn apparel, and indeed the heat of the Climate will not permit them to wear any; very few have nothing on to cover their secrets. Most have but one stone the other is ficed away in their Infancy, that *Venus* may not too much allure them from Martial exploits: wherefore the Women take great delight in strangers. One of them so Strongly besieged my modesty, that more for fear than love, I yielded to her incontineny: I was displeased at nothing but the sight of her; for her flesh so Velvet could be softer. There are in this place great quantity of Lions, which in dark Weather use great subtilty to catch and eat some Savages: They again in the day-time dig Pits, and covering them with boughs: do train the couragious Lions thither, where they receive destruction, eating them to day, who perhaps were Sepulchres to their friends or parents the day before. I have seen these well-bred people descend in a morning from the Mountaines, adorned with the raw guts of Lions or other wild Beasts, serving for an hour or two for chains or neck-laces, and afterwards for their Break-fast; of which good chear if I would not participate, I might fast for them: so that my squeamish Stomach was forced to give entertainment to that unwelcome guest, to keep starving out of doors. The ship that brought us hither was now ready to set sail, being bound for *Goa*, the Master whereof was a *Portugal*, who understood both *Latine* and *French* very well, of which I was not Ignorant: I addrest my self to him in the *French* Tongue, desiring him to accept of mine and my friends service, which he condescended to with much willirgness. At *Goa* we staid not long, but from thence passing towards *Surrat*, a Vehement and unexpected

expected storm overtook us, for three days raging incessantly, so that those which were acquainted with those parts, very much feared an *Hero-Can* a tempest commonly of thirty days continuance and of such fury that Ships, Trees, and Houses perish unavoidably in it: once in Nine years, it seems it fails not to visit them. It chanc'd that my Comrade being heedless and unexperient'd in Sea-affairs was wash'd of by a Wave into the Sea and so was buried in the large and deep grave of the vast Ocean a sure treasury for the resurrection. The foulness of the Weather forc'd a *Junk*-man of War, full of desperate *Malabars*, a bloody and War-like people in view of us; but the Seas were too lofty for them to board us. After three watches, the Sea changed colour and was calmer; and by the swimming of many Snakes about our Vessel, the Sea-men knew we were not far from shore, landing shortly afterwards safely at *Surrat*.

Some two hours after we set sail, we were becalmed, having not the least breeze of wind, the Weather withall being exceeding hot and sultry: at length we arriv'd in *Swally-Road*, where was riding an English Vessel: there we cast Anchor: the English men came aboard of us, whom our Captain welcomed with the best of his entertainment. I could not forbear embracing my dear Country-men, shewing them so many demonstrations of joy, that by their looks, they seem'd to question whether I was in my right Wits. Their Masters-mate calling me aside, askt me how I came to be engaged in this Vessel? how long since I came from *England*? with many other questions too tedious here to relate. To all which I gave him such satisfactory answers, that he seem'd very well pleased. I gave him a summaty

relation of what I had suffer'd, since my departure from my own Country; the report whereof, seem'd to extract much pity from him. In fine I told him I had a great desire to see *England* again, and to that end desired him to make use of what interest he could, to remove me into his ship: he promised he would, and accordingly giving a present to our Captain, he so far prevail'd upon him to let me go and perswaded the chief of whom he was concerned withall, to entertain me, which they did with much willingness. I was so like a Sea-man in this short time, that none could distinguish me from one that received his first rocking in a Ship. I carried about me as deep an hogu of Tarpawlin as the best of them, and there was no term of Art belonging to any part of the Ship or tackling, but what I understood. I could dr nk water that stunk (as if *stercus humanum* had been steep't two or three days in it) as well as any of them, and eat Beef and Pork ( that stirr'd as if it had received a second life, and was crawling out of the platter to seek out the rest of his Members ( I say, I could devour it with as much greediness ( scorning that my appetite should be ever again tax'd with any of those Epithetes, either nice or squeamish ) as if it had been but nine hours instead of nine Months in salt. And to make me the more compleat, I had forgot to wash either hands or face, or what the use of a comb or shirt was neither did I know how to undress my self; or if wet to the skin, to make use of any other means than my natural heat to dry my self: I never lookt on a har or band, but as prodigies. But to return to my purpose where I left off. In three days time we set sail for *Swalley-Road*, steering our course from them all along the coast of *India, Decan & Malabar*. I knew not

whither they intended neither did I care now, a thinking my self safe being amongst my friends : on the 20 of *May*, seven days from our weighing Anchor in *Swally-Road*, we came to an anchor at *Dely*, a Town of the *Malabars* : We durst not land, the people being so treacherous and bloody ; yet we suffered them to come aboard us in their small Canoes selling us for any trifles, *Coco-nuts*, *Jacks*, *Green pepper*, *Indian-pease*, *Hens Eggs*, and the like. They brought us likewise *Oranges* of so pleasant a taste the rind vying with the juice, which shall become most grateful to the palate : We had likewise from them *Plantanes* a fruit supposed by some, to be that which *Eve* was tempted withal ; if a man gathers them green, yet will they ripen afterwards colour'd with a dainty yeallow : the rind or skin will peel off with much facility ; they melt in the mouth, giving a most delicious taste and relish. These *Malabars* are coal-black, well limb'd, their hair long and curled ; about their heads they only tye a small piece of *Linnen*, but about their bodies nothing but a little Cloth which covers their secrets. Notwithstanding their cruelty and inhumanity, we man'd out our long Boat, and 15 men whereof I was one, went ashore, carrying some *Muskets* and *Swords* with us, suspecting the worst : Landing, they fled from us, but notwithstanding sending good store of poysoned arrowvs and darts amongst us. It is no wonder that these people are so black, for they live under the Scorching fire of the torrid Zone. We returned to our Ship, finding it no way safe to stay here longer, next morning hoisting sail, we came to *Canavar*, where vve met with people more civil, whereupon we landed & receiving things from the inhabitants of considerable value, for toys and trifles, vve gave them in lieu, we resolved to stay

stay here a while. The better sort of those people are called *Nairos*, whose heads are covered with a lovv tulpant, and their middles vvith a party-coloured Plad, resembling a Scotch Plad: The poorer sort have nothing but a small vail over their privities, vvholly naked elsevvhere; vvhich vail or flap the Women in courtelie vvill turn aside, and shew a man their *Pudenda*, by vvay of gratitude for any courtesie received as if they would render satisfaction vvith that vvhich could never receive plenary satisfaction it self. They have a strange custom in their Marriages, observed among them by the highest to the lowest: vvho so Marrieth is not to have the first nights imbraces vvith his bride, but is contented to bestovv her Maiden-head on the *Bramini* or Priests vvho do not alvvays enjoy it being glutted vvith such frequent offerings, and therefore vvill many times sel them to Strangers. Such a proffer I had once made me, and vvith shame I mu't confess, I did accept it, forgetting those sacred vovvs I made in *Newgate*, to live a more pious, strict, and sober life. The Bride that night, vvvas plac'd in one of their Fanes, as its customary, the Priest or *Bramin* coming to her, but instead thereof, according to agreement betveen this Priestly Pahnim and myself I vvont: I vvondred to find her so lovv of stature, but I did not much matter it then, minding something else; vvhich having performed, I departed. The next morning I had a great desire to see her, but vvvas amazed to see her so young believing it impossible (though I knew the contrary) a child (for I may so call her, being but seven years of age) could be capable of mans reception at that tender age. Aftervvards, I vvvas informed, it vvvas usual for them to marry so soon: first, being extreame-ly salacious and lecherous, and as fit, nay, as prone

to enjoy man at that age, as *Europaeans* at fourteen. Next, they extreemly honour Wedlock, inſomuch, that if any of their children die whiſt very young: they will hire ſome Maiden to be married to him, and ſo lie with him the night after his deceaſe. So ſoon as we arrived which is a cuſtom they uſe to all ſtrangers, of what Country ſoever ) we had preſented us choiſe of many Virgins; our Boat-ſwain chuſing one he fancied for a ſmall price, ſhe guided him to a lodging, where if he would have ſtayed ſo long, ſhe would have performed his domeſtick affairs, as well at board as bed, diſcharging her duty very punctually: but he that undertakes any ſuch thing, muſt be very wary that he be not venerally familiar with any other woman, leſt that ſhe with whom he hath contracted himſelf for ſuch a time, doth recompence his inſtancy with mortal poiſon. At his departure, her wages muſt be paid to her Parents, who returns then with much joy, and they receive her with as much credit and oſtentation. The chiefſt among them hold it a very great courteſie, if any one will ſave them the labour, pain & trouble, by accepting the Hymeneal rites of his Bride. I ſhould have told the Reader, that the *Bramins* are ſo much reſpected & eſteemed by the commonalty, that if any of them gets their wives or daughters with child, they believe that off-ſpring to be much holier than their own, being extracted from Pagan piety. Their Funerals they celebrate after this manner: Bringing the dead corps near to their Fanes or Churches, they conſume it to aſhes, by fire made of ſweet ſmelling wood unto which they add coſtly perfumes in Aromatick gums and ſpices: If the wife only (for here they will not hear of Polygamy) caſt not her ſelf into the flames voluntarily, they look upon her

to



to be some common prostitute, having not any thing commendable in her natural disposition; but if she freely commits her self to the flames, with her husbands carcase, she from that noble act (for so it is esteemed of among these infidels) derives to her memory, reputation and glory amongst her surviving friends and kindred. They are deluded on to this resolution by their *Bramins*, who perswade them by so doing, they shall enjoy variety of perpetual pleasures, in a place that is never disturbed by alteration of weather, wherein night is banisht, there being a continual spring; neither is there wanting any thing that shall ravish each individual sense. This was at first a stratagem invented by some long-headed Politician to divert them from murdering their husbands (which they were frequently guilty of, by reason of their extream leachery and inartiaie venery) so by that means they were reduced to that good order, as that they tender'd the preservation of their husbands healths and lives equally with their own. For my part, I could wish the like custom enjoyn'd on all married *English* females (for the love I bear to my own Country) which I am confident would prevent the destruction of thousands of well-meaning-Christians, which receive a full stop in the full career of their lives, either by corrupting their bodies by venomous medicaments administred by some pretended Doctors hand (it may be her Stallion) unto which he is easily perswaded, by the good opinion he hath of his wifes great care and affection for him: or else his body is poysoned by sucking or drawing in the contagious fumes which proceed from her contaminated body, occasion'd by using pluralities

for her venereal satisfaction, and so dies of the new Consumption.

Or lastly, by pettish and petulant behaviour, she vvearieth him of his life and at last is vvilling to die that he may be freed not only from the clamorous noise of her tongue, but the derision of his neighbours, and scandal that she hath brought upon him may not reach his eares That all such might be mindful of their duty, I would have (were it at my disposing) these two lines fixt as a Motto to their doors.

*A Couchant Guckeld, and a rampant Wife,  
Are Cop'latives disjunctive all their life.*

## CHAP XXVI.

*From Delyn he sailed to Zeyloon; with what he there observed. From Zeyloon, he arrived at Syam; and what there he saw and Observed. From hence he sails to Dô-Cerne so called by Portugals; who Adam like, give (or as I may say, take too much liberty) in imposing names on all new places; and things. By the Hollanders, it is called Mauritius. Its generall Description.*

**T**HE Isle of Zeyloon is very famous, and not far distant from the Point of India, called Cape Comreim: it abounds with all sorts of odoriferous and Aromatical Spices: the people are Pagans not owning a Deity: some though have heard of Chrřst, and others of Mahomet, but such are rarely to be found. They

They go naked not compelled thereunto by want or poverty, but meer heat of the Sun. They are great Idolaters, Worshiping things in monstrous shapes. On the top of a high Mountain, they have set conspicuously the *Idæ* of an horrible *Coco-dæmon*, unto which Pilgrims from remote parts do resort; and upon this account a King of *Zeylon* coming once descended this Idol: another time intending to make a second repetition of his former derision, the King was even frightened out of his Wits; for not only he but his attendants all saw how this *Dæmon* threatened him for so doing, by shaking a flaming Cymeter, and rowling his fiery eyes: from his mouth gaping issued out fiery flames; whereat this King returns with as much penitence as amazement, resolving by his due respect and worship for the time to come, to make an atonement for his former errors. For my part, had I not believed there was a Devil, the sight of this horrid monstrous representation would have induced me into the belief that this was one really. They have in another place a Chappel, in which they adore the Devil (whom they call *Deumo*) the height thereof is about three yards, and uncovered: the wooden entrance is engraven with hellish shapes; within their beloved Devil or *Deumo* is enthronized on a brazen Mount; From his head issue four great horns, his eyes of an indifferant proportionable bigness, having somewhat a larger circumference than two sawcers; his nose flat, a mouth like a port-cullice beautified with four Tusks like Elephants teeth; his hands like claws and his feet not unlike a Monkeys: beside him stand lesser *Deumo's* attending on this *Pagod*, some whereof are represented or pictured devouring souls. Every morning the Priest washeth them, not departing till he hath

craved their meladiction; and when he takes his leave, he is very careful of offending the Devil by shewing his posteriors, and therefore goes from him retrograde, stedfastly fixing his eyes on the Idol. 'Tis strange that a rational soul should be so much infatuated, as to adore such a monstrous and ridiculous thing. The people in way of mutual love and amity, use to exchange their Wives; a thing, though much hated by the jealous *Spaniard*, yet would be very acceptable to other *Europeans*, or else to be rid of them altogether, who are the daily murderers of their content and quiet. Polygamy, or plurality of Wives, is here permitted; and as the men are granted the liberty to have more then one wife, so are the women allowed more than one husband. However, the women hath the disposal left her of her children, giving them to him she hath the greatest affection for; which he receives, not questioning his interest or right ( by generation ) unto the infant.

*Elsewhere the Fates decreed a Cuckold's lot,  
To keep that child another man begot;  
And by his joy therein he plainly shows,  
He thanks the man that pay'd those debts he owes:  
But these Slie-Blacks in justice thought it fit,  
That he which got the child, likewise keep it:  
Therefore both love and custom made it so,  
On the true Father they the child bestow:  
By which good law unto each man 'tis known,  
That he doth keep no other child but's own.  
Were this observ'd in England, I durst swear  
Some what d'ye lacks would heirs to Lords appear;  
And half of what some own, must be conferr'd  
On such who have a Father's name deserv'd.*

*these*

*These Blacks do tax our women, for they paint.  
The Devil white, and make him seem a Saint;  
To let them know, they are far greater evils;  
For fairest females oft are foulest Devils.*

We stay'd not long here, but having dispatch'd what we came for, we sail'd along the coast of *Choromandel*. and landed at *Méliapor*. The people are much after the same complexion of those of *Delyn* only a little more duskie, and go in a manner naked, too. Here are likewise great store of *Bramins*, who are very busie and industrious to instruct these poor ignorant souls in the perfect way to damnation; for which they have the honour and estimation of all conferred upon them. We man'd out our long-boat and went a shore; upon our landing, it was our hap, to be eye-witnesses of one of their Funerals, which was performed after this manner- The husband was carried before the combustible Pile; his most dearly loving wife closely following after, attended by her Parents & children; musick (such as they have, which I cannot compare to that of the Spheres) playing before, behind, and on each side of her. She was dress'd both neatly and sumptuously, to the height and rudeness of their Art her head, neck, and arms (not omitting her nose, legs, & toes) each bedeckt and charged with Bracelets of Silver, with jewels every where about her distributed. She carried flowers in her hands which she dispos'd of to those she met. The Priests going backwards before her, shew'd her a magical glass, which represented to her sight whatever might be pleasing to her sensual appetite. The *Bramin* all along inculcating to her thoughts, the sense-ravishing joys she shall possess after her decease; at which this poor deluded soul smiled, and seemed

seemed to be much transported. We followed them till they came to the fire, which was made of sweet odoriferous wood. As soon as her dead husband was committed to the flames, she voluntarily leapt in after him, incorporating her self with the fire, and his ashes: we wondred that the standers-by would permit her thus to destroy her self, imagining this rash action Proceeded from the ardency of her affection; but perceiving her friends to throw in after her, jewels and many precious things, with much exultation and expressions of joy, we concluded this to be the effects of custom. Such as refuse to burn in this manner, are immediately shaven, & are hourly in danger to be murdered by their own issue or kindred, looking upon them as tumpets: and indeed, many of them are so audaciously impudent that upon the least distaste, or not having their luxurious expectations answered, nothing more intended or indeavoured then the lives of their husbands. They are in these parts so extreemly idolatrous, and so over-swayed by the Devil, that they adore a great Idol made of Copper gilded, whose statue is carried up and down, mounted on a glorious Chariot, with eight very large wheels overlayed with gold, the ascent or steps to the charriot are very large & capacious, on which sit the priests, attended by little young girls, vvhho for devotion sake, prostitute themselves freely to the heat of any libidinous spectator? for so doing, they are intitled the *pagodes* children: A very strange zeal in their bewitched or belotted Parents, to destinate the off-spring of their bodies, from their non-age, to such an abominable liberty, for by letting them know the use of man so soon, it cannot but be very prejudicial to their bodies: but also invest them with the thoughts of perpetual vvhoring: For, that woman

that



that shall admit of more than one to her private embraces, will admit of any upon the like account. Nay, such is their blind zeal and superstition, that as the Chariot passeth, some will voluntarily throw them selves under the wheels, who are crusht in pieces by the vveight of the Idol and its attendants suffering death without the benefit of a happy (but to them unhappy) Martyrdom.

*Syam* is a kingdom contiguous to *pegu*, a part of the *East-Indies*: And, as the people are included within the burning Zone, therefore far from being fair, yet are tall of stature, very strong and valiant and generally so stout, that few are found among them crooked. Formerly they were much given to *Sodomy*: to Prevent which twas wisely ordered, (though strangely) that the males as soon as born, should have a bell of gold (and in it a dried Adders tongue) Put through the Prepuce and flesh. When then desire of copulation stimulates any of them he Presents himself to some expert Midwives, who advise him to drink *Opium*, or some such somniferous Potion: which having done in their presence, he falls asleep, during which interval they remove the ball, and apply to the orifice from whence it was taken, an unguent, which affords a speedy cure: then is he free to make use of such as his fancy leads him to. The young Girls are served in a worse manner, & it is as great a rarity: to finde a pure Virgin here at ten years old, as to finde a Maid at sixteen, in most places of *France* or its neighbouring Countreys. And that these young Fry may be capable of that employment they are destinated unto, they have Portions given them to drink. The women here (still the more to allure the men from that detestable & unnatural act of *Sodomy*) go naked (as little a novelty

in these parts as for *Irish* and *Scotch* to wash their cloaths with their feet, their coars, smock and all tuckt up about their middles, though twenty men stand by as (deriding) spectators: I say, they go naked to their middles, where the better sort are covered with a fine transparent Tassate or dainty Lawn, which by a cunning device is so made to open, that as they pass a long, the least air discovers all, to all mens immodest views. Their priests, which they call *Tallupoi*, are seeming very zealously superstitious, they somewhat incline to Mahometisin; for they pretend they will not drink wine, being forbidden it by their Law, yet are abominable hypocrites: for, though they wear a sheep-skin with the wool thereon, not suffering any hair to be on their bodies, and in shew lead a chaste life, yet I found the contrary as you shall understand by what pass between one of them and my self. I being on shore with our Ships crew, I chanc'd to walk abroad, carrying with me a bottle of *Spanish* wine: as I enter'd into a wood, intending not to adventure too far, there came to me one of these *Tallupoi* or Priests, in the habit aforesaid, with a horn about his neck resembling a Sow-gelders but much less; with which, I was told, they with the sound thereof used to convene the people to hear them preach. This holy Infidel espying me blest himself (as I guess by his gesture) and approaching near me, I imagined that he prayed for me, by the elevation of his eyes and hands: as a requital, I proffered him some of my wine; and having tasted thereof, liked it so well, that by signs I understood he desired his hornful of me: to tell you the truth, I liked it so well my self that I had no desire to part with one drop more of it; but his importunities soon prevailed, that I granted his request; which ha-

ving

ving obtained he made no more adoe but drank it off making but one gulp thereof; a thing contrary to the strictness of his profession. After this he seemed to bless me and so departed. It was but a little while before he again presented himself to my view; and beckoning to me, I followed him: coming close up to him, he pointed with his finger to a place where covertly I espied three Maidens (as I supposed) to whom he by signs perswaded me to go. Sitting down amongst them, they entertained me with as much civility as they were endued withall, and courted me after their amorous fashion. One of these was the handsomest that I had seen in those parts; though not to be compared for form of face with the homeliest Kitchen-stuff wench in *London*. I dallied with her so long, till that lust conquered my fancy; attempting something, and being in a fair way to it; this *Satyr-Goat Devil* (I can't invent a name bad enough to call him by) presently falls down upon us; and taking me thus unawares, lying on my belly, I was not able to help my self; that he had like to have performeed his business; and questionless had effected it, but that the two Maidens standing by (no ways ashamed at this most shameful fight) assisted me, pulling him off. I presently started up, and seized him; and tripping up his heels, I laid him on his back having so done, I bound him; then taking out my knife, I could not find in my heart to spare him one inch; and that he might not have any witnesses left of what was done, I took away his testicles too. The three young Girles fled, fearing my rage and revenge might have extended to them: And fearing my self that they would give information of what I had done, I fled too to my Ships-Comrades; and giving them account of what had happened, we all judged

Judg'd it the safest way to go aboard, and so we did with all expedition possible,

*De-Cerne* or *Mauritius*, is an Isle situate within the torrid Zone, close by the Tropick of *Capricorn* but it is very unnertain unto what part of the world it belongs, participating both of *Amarica*, and bending towards the *Asiatick* Sea, from *India* to *Java*. This Isle aboundeth with what the use of man shall require. The landing looking out at Sea, is Mountainous: the circuit of this Island is about an hundred miles: it procreates an healthy and nourishing air, the great quantity of eyer flourishing and fragrant trees, doth no less lenifie the burning heat, when the Sun enters into *Cadricorn*, as helped by the sweet mollifying breath of the North-west wind when *Sol* again adheres to *Cancer*. Now as the temperature of that Body is best compos'd; that participates indifferently of all the Elements, which either super-abounding or wanting, begets defect: What then is the temperature of this place which is blest with, and abounds in all, and abortive in none? Water is here very plentiful drilling it self from the high rocks and trickling down into the Valleys, spreads it self into various Meanders, till those sweet and pleasant waters disembugue themselves into the lap of the salt Ocean. There is so great a quantity of Wood, that we could hardly procure passage. But of those many various Trees we found none so beneficial to us as the *Palmeto*: this Tree is long, straight, and very soft, having neither leaves, boughs nor branches, save at the top, whereon there is a soft plith, wherein consists the sole vegetative of that tree, which cut out, the *Palmeto* in a very short time expires. Its taste is much like a kernel of an Hazel-nut boiled, it is like Cabbage. But the chiefest Commodity

modity that this Tree produceth, is the Wine which  
 issueth from it, pleasant and as nourishing as Muska-  
 dine or Alligant. Thus we procured some thereof;  
 coming where two or three grew together, with an  
 augure we bored some small holes in each, which  
 immediately the liquor fill'd, then with a small cane  
 or quill we suckt the wine out of one Tree, then we  
 went to another, and from that to the third: by that  
 time we had drained the last, the holes in the two o-  
 ther were full again. This course we followed so  
 smartly, that in less then an hour, three of us were so  
 drunk (whereof I was none of the Soberest) that had  
 not these Trees been near the shore, for ought I know  
 by the morning we might have feasted the Wild  
 Beasts. Divers other trees there be, strange both in  
 shape and nature: one whereof (meerly out of curi-  
 osity) I must needs taste, which for half an hour so  
 bit my tongue, as if I had had my mouth full of Vit-  
 riol or Spirit of salt. It is a comely tree to look  
 on, but brings forth not any thing that is good:  
 this tree is in a manner naked too, and the body  
 thereof as soft and penetrable, as new Cheese: the  
 form of the Tree, its uselessness, with that hidden  
 sting it carries in it, together with its softness, the  
 last of which, invites me to cut these lines therein,  
 which my knife as easily performed, as to write  
 a mans name with a stick on the sand. The lines  
 were these.

*Th' art like a Woman, but thou Wan'st her breath,  
 Who is fair, but fruitless, and will sting to death  
 If tasted: would I could blast thee with my curse,  
 Since woman thou art like, for nothing's worse,*

There is another Tree, which beareth a cod full

of sharp prickles, wherein lies hid a round fruit in form of a Doves egg; crack it, and therein contained you shall finde a kernel; pleasant in taste, but poysonous in its operation. My sweet tooth longed for a taste, and being very toothsome I did eat severall; but it was not long ere my Guts were all in an uproar, and were resolyed in this mutiny could they have found way, to charge my mouth with high treason against the rest of my Members; but they were at last content only to discharge their fury through the Postern of their Microcosm; which they did so furiously, that I was much afraid my gutts having spent all their shot, they would have marcht out alter (I had in plain *English*) in less than six hours sixty stools, besides purging upwards; and had not we had a very skillful Dr. Chyrurgeon of our ship, I had unavoidably perisht. Nature in this Island shewed her prodigality of water and wood, corresponding also in every thing else a fruitful Mother labours to be excellent in, Here she seems to boast, not only in the variety of feather'd creatures but in the rareness of that variety which should I run over but briefly, the subject is so large, that by some I cannot but be thought too tedious. However I shall lightly touch thereon. Here, and there only is generated the *Dodo*; for rareness of shape contending with the *Arabian Phenix* her body is round and very fat, the least whereof commonly weigh above twenty pound: They please the sight more than the appetite, for their flesh is of no nourishment, and very offensive to the stomach: By her visage (darting forth melancholy) she seems to be sensible of that injury Nature hath done her, in framing so great a body and yet useles, but to please the eye; committing



(committing its guidance to complemental wings for so I'm forced to call them) since they are so small and impotent, that they only serve to prove her an off-spring of the winged tribe. Here are Batts also, as large as Goshawks, There is likewise great plenty of Fish: amongst the rest of most especial note, is the Cow-fish; the head thereof not unlike an Elephant's her eyes are small, her body at full Growth, about three yards long, and one broad; her fins exceeding little; her flesh (being an amphibious creature, living as well at Land sometimes, as in the Sea) doth taste much like Veal. Some say that this Fish doth affect, and takes much delight in the sight of a mans Visage. About this Island are fly-fish, Dolphins, and Sharks. One of our men imprudently swimming one day, the weather being very hot, in our sight a sharke came and bit off his leg, & part of his thigh, and he thereupon sunk; vve made out to lave him, but before we came, he was drowned. Here are Tortoises so great, that they will creep with two mens burdens on their backs; but their pace is so slow, that they would make but ill Porters, going not above ten yards in two hours, when they make their greatest speed. The birds here are so unaccustomed to frights that I have shot five or six times amongst a flock, letting the dead still lie, and not one of the surviving did so much as offer to flie. The Goats here have more of the Politician in them; for they seldom feed or rest themselves, but they set out their sentinels.

## CHAP XXVIII.

Hence he sailed for Bantam ; by the way he recounts the danger he had like to have sustained, by ascending a burning Mountain. Going a shore to Bantam and observing the Merchants what they did taking up Goods upon credit ( as it is usual in those parts ) till the Ship is ready to set sail, he by a stratagem turns Merchant too and cheats a Bannyan, or China-Merchant. The next going a shore of the Seamen, this Bannyan ( for the injury was done him ) caused a Running a Muck that is, he instigated a great many people to kill all they met of that ship. The loss of several men thereupon ; but he is out of danger, having cunningly kept himself aboard that time, He afterwards had like to have been killed by a Creole the Bannyan had hired for that purpose. His enemies being destroyed he marrieth an Indian Ponce-woman. He discants on his Marrying, and lying with an Indian-Black : Gives wholesome advice to others ; and concludes for this time.

**V**Veighing Anchor, we steer'd our course for Bantam ; but being much straitned by the way for want of fresh Water, we were compell'd to make up to the first Land we discry'd. Though the darkness of the night blinded our eyes from such discoveries, yet flames of fire not far distant from us, gave us perfect intelligence that land was not far off. That night we cast Anchor, fearing we might run foul of some rock or shelf ; In the morning we saw a large

large track of Land before us, not knowing what place it should be. Our Captain commanded the Long-boat to be mand out, to procure water, if any good were there : amongst the rest, I went for one ; for I was very greedy to observe Novelties. Coming on shore, and seeing this Hill now and then belch out flames ; by my persuasions I made my fellows forget for a time their duty or errand they came about to make some inquisition into this *miracle* of Nature. Whereupon we all resolved unanimously to ascend the Hill, and with much difficulty we came so nigh the top, that we heard a most hideous noise proceeding from the Concave thereof : so terrible it was, that we now began to condemn our rash attempt and stood at a convenient distance, judging it the only *medium* of our safety. Whilst we were thus in a *delirium*, not knowing what was the best to be done ; the Mountain was instantly possess'd with an *Ague-fit*, and afterwards vomiting up smoak and stones into the Air (which afterwards fell down in a shower upon our heads) we thought we could not escape without a miracle : and whilst we were all striving which way, with greatest expedition we might eschew the danger, there rose in the midst of us such an heap of earth, ashes, and fire, with such kind of combustible matter, as that we all seem'd as so many moveable burning Beacons ; and without any thoughts of helping each other, every one endeavour'd to secure himself. And although I was the last in the company, yet in this expedition it was much available to me ; for my companions making more hast than good speed, tumbling down the Hill before me, fell several of them together ; which *blocks* lying in my way obstructed my passage, and so saved the breaking of my neck, which otherwise would have

been inevitable. In this conflict, most of us lost the hair of our heads, not without receiving several batteries upon the *Out-works* of our bodies. At first sight we were much afraid; but the consequence made it appear, we were not more afraid than hurt. We made a shift to crawl down the rest of the way; and having fixt our unadvised feet on the bottom of the Mountain we resolv'd we would never again Pay so dearly for our curiosity, but forthwith went in search of some Spring, that might serve as well to quench our cloaths as our thirst. What we sought for we quickly found; and so filling our empty Cask, we made what haste we could aboard. The Captain and the rest stood amaz'd to see us look so ghastly, and were very impatient to know what was the matter with us; we told them succinctly what had happened, and what great dangers we undervvent: instead of pitying us, they only laugh'd at us for being such adventurous fools. Having thus furnished our selves with what vve wanted, we set sail again for *Bantam*, where we safely arrived in a short time. As soon as we came into the Harbour before *Bantam*, we presently maned out our Long-boat and went ashore, to acquaint the *president* what we vvere, and by vvhhat authority vve came thither to Traffick, being impowvered by the *East-India* Company. We vvere received with much demonstrations of joy, and nobly feasted for three dayes together. Here note, that the house vvherein the *president* dwelleth, is the receptacle for the vvhole Factory, each man according to his quality having a dwelling within this house suitable to his dignity; the Factors all in general taking their daily repast with the *President*. In a weeks time I learned by observation the custom of the Country; and manner or way of Trading our Merchant

taking

taking up Goods daily, and sending them aboard with out giving present satisfaction, it being sufficient that he belonged to such a Ship, and therefore must pay before he go, otherwise the King will arrest the Ship, compelling him to make restitution or payment. One time I met with a *Bannyan*, whom I observed to have a box full of precious stones: I could not sleep for thinking how I should make my self a Partner with him. At last I hammered out this invention: I cloathed my self in *Indian-silk*, according to the custom of the Country & having so done I discoloured my face, & clapt a patch upon one of my eyes. In this equipage I address'd my self to this *Bannyan*, who presently laid open his treasure to my view. I was not long in chusing what I esteemed as most vallable, & demanding of him the price we agreed he should have either so many pieces of English gold within two dayes, or else take his choice of what commodities I had aboard. We made a shift to understand each others broken expressions and he without the least suspicion of my treachery, delivered his stones into my hands, Taking of my disguise, I went instantly aboard, & hid what I had cheated the *Bannyan* of (as I might easily do, for the smallness of its bulk) in the Hold of our Ship, resolving not to go ashore yet awhile. The day of payment being come, & the *Bannyan* no where finding me on Land, came aboard of our Ship, where by signs he made known to our Captain his errand, that a Merchant belonging to his Ship had bought commodities of him, & promised to pay him on that day. Our Captain replied, that he verily believed he was mistaken (as knowing what commodities the Merchants belonging properly to the Ship had bought) and therefore told him he must make inquiry elsewhere for satisfaction. The

The Bannyan still persisted, alleading he was not mistaken and that he was confident if he might have a sight of all the men, he could out of them select the concern'd person. So wary I was of being discovered that I acquainted not one soul with my project for had I committed this secret to any, (though ever so dear a friend) it had been mine no longer; neither could I have promised to my self safety. Hereupon the Captain ordered us to be all call'd a-lost: which was speedily performed. He went all round the company, viewing every man particularly, and very heedfully. At last he came to me, & there made a stand, (which had like to have made my heart start out of my breast:) he lookt upon me on this side, and on the other side, and to say truly, on every side: and having thorowly eyed me, he ran to our Captain, saying, That should be the man (pointing to me) but that he is a *white man*, & hath *two sees* (*id est*) two eyes. Whereupon I was strictly exami ed: but for all this sifting, I would not let drop any thing of a confession, that should convict me of guilt; but with lifting up hands and eyes to Heaven, I utterly denyed that ere I saw this man, or ever had any dealing with him. I had now forgot what promises and vows I made to Heaven, (when in *Newgate*, and senten ed to be hang'd at *Tyburn*) what a serious, pious and honest life I would lead, if I escaped that eminent danger: the concerns of this life and that to come were then in. Herein I see the old Proverb verified:

*Quo semel est imbuta recens servabit odorem  
Testa diu, &c. -----*

That Cask will savour of that liquor still,  
with which at first the Cask a man did fill.



Or according to that thred-bare expression so commonly used :

*Naturam expillas furā, licet usque recurrit.*

Though man should stop his nature from its course,  
It will overflow again with greater force.

In short, the *Bannyan* since he could not say positively I was the man, was dismiss'd, not without a solemn vow he would be revenged of us all in general ; and cleared of the Indictment.

The next day, a great many of our men went ashore, and going into *China-row*, (a street so called in *Bantam*) to drink Punce and Tea, a great crew of Indians and Chineses (headed by this *Bannyan*) fell upon them, killing whom they could, not directing their revenge upon any particular person, which they call a *Muck*; ) so hot and sharp was this Conflict; that many were killed on both sides, but more wounded. This accident alarmed the whole town, but most especially the English there resident; but at last, with much ado, this grand uproar was calmed. It was my good fortune, that I was not then among them, otherwise I might have been made a sacrifice among the rest of my fellows. But I was fore-warned, having been pre-informed that such broyles are usual upon such occasions; wherefore I kept my self out of harms way for that time

But not long after, thinking their malice blown over, I went ashore; and walking with others of our Boats-crew in the same *Row*, (where most of our men were us'd to resort, because of the liquor that was there to be had, and a Where to boot) a fellow came to me, with this *Bannyan* I cheated, and both of them with *Creases*,

a kind

(a kind of Dagger of about a foot and half long) would have stabled me, had not my friends prevented them, by Striking up their heels, and afterwards with their own *Creases* flabed them to the heart. After this, we could walk very quietly without any disturbance, going any where without any danger.

Being very hot there, our usual pastime was to go up a little small River (joyning to the Town) four or five miles to wash our selves: the trees so covered it over like an Arbor, that the beams of the Sun could not penetrate it; by which means it was fine and cool, which very much refresht our parched bodies. I never came a shore, but I drank very immoderately of *Pnces*, *Rack*, *Tea*, &c. which was brought up in great China-Jugs holding at least two Quarts: with every such Jug there was brought in a Dish of Sweetmeats, not of one sort, but variety, and excellent good: for which we paid a shilling *English*: and if you called for another, Jug, you paid no more, unless a Dish ushered it in.

One house especially I much frequented for the Indian womans sake that kept it: for though she was black, or rather tawny, yet she was well featured and well formed, having long black hair (when she untied the tresses) hanging down to her legs. She from the first shewed me as much kindness as could be expected from that lump of Barbarism: & I could discern her inclinations (in the same manner as a man may from beasts, when they are prone to Generation) but yet it went against my stomach to yield to her motions. However she continued her love to me, nor letting me pay for any thing I call'd for: and when there was no necessity of being aboard, she would in a manner make me lie in her house, (which as their houses commonly are, had but one story) the

the beds they use are a kind of Quilt, hard for were they soft, the hotness of the climate would cause them to be very destructive to mans body, even melting his very reins. Gold and Jewels she had great quantity with an house richly furnished after the Indian fashion. For this consideration, I perswaded my self to marry her; and with severall arguments alledged, I gained so much conquest over my self, that I could kiss her and not disgorge my self: and by accustoming my self to her company, methought I began to take some delight in it. By degrees Interest so overpowered me that I resolved to marry her. Thus many (nay most) for mony, stick not to give themselves to the Devil. Having one night (lying there) seriously considered of my resolution, and liking it indifferent well, I fell asleep; but wondered when I awaked, to see a thing lie by me *all black*, as if she had had a *Mourning smock* on. It seems she could hold out no longer: I pretended to flee from her; but she held me fast in her arms, using what rhetorick she could to perswade me to the contrary. I asked her what she meant? She told me in a little broken *English* she had got, that she would *Money me*: Marry me, she meant: I, Money me, that I like well but without it, let the Devil have married her for me. I asked her several questions, to which she gave me satisfaction, and enjoyed her severall things, which she greedily condescended to: whereupon I gave her the first fruits of her desires. But ere I go farther, take something of my Ryming fancie with you.

*At the first sight, her head seem'd in a Case  
Or that a Vizard-mask had hid her face,  
Or that she was some Fiend from hell was stole;  
Having for Lust been burnt there to a cole.  
I could not tell what this foul thing should be:  
A Succubus it did appear to me;  
A damn'd black soul, that was by heaven sent  
To make me of my blacker crimes repent.  
I started from her, being much amazed;  
The more I was afraid the more I gazed.  
Then she arose, and caught me in her arm;  
Such soft flesh sure intended me no harm.  
Twas time to roar, since that I could not tell,  
But that I was encircled (now) by Hell.  
Stay, stay (said she) I am no Hellish-fiend  
I am flesh and blood, and am thy loving friend:  
If my complexion do not please thy minde,  
Then close thine eyes, yet love: Thus love is blind.  
I understood her tongue, and streight did swear  
That I would banish this my causeless fear;  
And so betook my self unto the Rug  
On which we lay, and after many a Tug  
I plighted faith with this kind Infidel:  
But what we did my modest tongue won't tell.  
I would at any time (might I but chuse)  
The fairest White for this same Black refuse.  
But mischief on't, let me shoot e're so right  
It can't be said that I did hit the White.*

Interest so blinded my reason, that I went instantly to my Captain, and gave him information of my proceedings, desiring his consent in the marrying this *Indian*, alleadging how advantagious it would be to me. He granted my request, upon my earnest importunity: and being dismiss from his service, we were

were married according to the Ceremonies of the Church by an English Priest, she renouncing her Paganism. What money was got by my wifes Trade I laid out in such Commodities the Country afforded as *Calico's Peper, Indico, Green-Ginger, &c.* and sold them immediately to the Ships lying in the harbour, doubling what I laid out : so that in short time I found my stock to increase beyond expectation: such satisfaction my Black received from me, that she thought she could not do enough to please me. I was an absolute Monarch in my family : she and her servants willingly condescended to be my vassals : yet though I thus enjoy'd the prerogative of an husband yet I did not Lord it too much : which won so much upon my wifes affection, and those that were concerned with her, that as soon as I desired any thing, it was immediately performed with much alacrity and expedition.

I fancy'd my life to be now as happy as the world could make it, having plenty of every thing, and not controled by the foolish self-will of an obstinate woman. I confess it was a great regret to my spirit, to lie by a woman so contrary to my own complexion but Custom made her become in process of time as lovely in my eye, as if she had been the compleatest European beauty. I now again considered how he must live, that intends to live well : and upon that consideration, concluded upon this resolution, not to neglect my duty to Heaven my self, or Neighbours : for he that fails in any of these, falls short in making his life commendable. For our selves, we need Order : for our Neighbor, Charity : and for the Deity Reverence and Humility. These three duties are so concatenated, that he which liveth orderly, cannot but be acceptable to his Maker and the World. No-  
thing

thing renders Man more contemned and hated than he whose actions onely tend to irregularity. One turbulent spirit will even differentiate the calmest Kingdom: so did my past unruly and disorderly life ruin my self, as well as many families. I have seen an Orthodox Minister in his Pulpit with his congregation about him and since revolving in my minde the comeliness of that well-ordered fight, I have thought within my self how mad he would appear, that should wildly dance out of his room. Such is man when he spurns at the Law he liveth under; and such was I, that could not be contained within due limits, living like the Drone on others labors, taking no pains, but onely making a humming noise in the world, till Justice seiz'd me for a wandering idle and hurtful vagabond, (*signaumpreus*) and so had like to thrust me out of the world, the Hive of industrious Bees.

Ill company at first misled me, and it is to be feared by my example others have been misled. For he that giveth himself leave to transgress, he must needs put others out of the way. Experience giveth us to understand, that he which first disorders himself, troubles all the company. Would every man keep his own life what a concord in Musick would every family be! It shall be my own endeavour to do this, and my cordial advice to others to do the like. Doubtless he that performeth his duty to Heaven shall finde such a peace within; that shall fit him for what soever falls. He shall not fear himself, because he knoweth his course is order: he shall not fear the World, because he knoweth he hath done nothing that hath anger'd it: he shall not be afraid of Heaven, for he knoweth he shall there finde the favour of a servant, nay more, a Son and be protected against the malice of Hell.

I know



I know I shall be lookt on no otherwise than an hypocrite; neither will the world believe my reformation real, since I have lived so notoriously and loof-  
King. Let a man do well an hundred times, it maybe he shall for a short time be remmembred and applauded; Or whereas if he doth evilly but once, he shall be ever con-  
demned, and never forgot. Howvver, let me live well, and I care not; though the vworld should flout my in-  
nocence, and call me dissembler: it is no matter if I suffer the worst of censorious reproaches, so that I get  
to Heaven at last: to the attaining of vvhich, the best counsel I can give my self and others is, *Bene vive, or-  
dinabiliter tibi, sociabiliter proximo, & humiliter Deo:*  
Live vvell, orderly to thy self, sociably to thy Neigh-  
bour, and humbly to thy Maker.

Take this as vvholesome advice though from an ill liver, vvvhich hath been in part discovered in the foregoing discourse; vvherein I have endeavoured, by drawing up a list of my ovvn evil actions, to frighten others from the commission of the like. For as there is no company so savagely bad, but a wise man may from it learn something to make himself better: so there is no Book so poorly furnished, out of which a man may not gather something for his benefit. Herein I have not minded so much words, as the matter; aiming at nothing more then how I might compleatly limn Vice in her proper ugly shape: having done that, I have done what I intended, the reformation of others by my wicked example. For Vice is of such a Toady complexion, so ill shaped and deformed, that she cannot chuse but teach the soul to hate; so loathsome when she is seen in her own nasty dress, that we cannot look upon her but with detestation and horriour. Vice was cunning and curiously painted when I fell into her scabbed embraces; neither

ther could I have ever known her foulness and rottenness, had I not tried whether her ( seeming ) fairness and soundness were real. Believe me she is no ways that she appears to be : therefore be not deluded by her : but let my life be to the Reader as a friend fallen into a pit that Gives warning to another to avoid the danger. So admirably hath Providence disposed of the ways of man, that even the sight of Vice in others, is like a Warning-arrow shot for us to take heed. Vice usually in her greatest bravery publisheth her self foolishly, thinking thereby to procure a train : and then it is, that the secret working of Conscience makes her turn her weapons against her self, and strongly pleads for her implacable adversary Vertue. We are frequently wrought to good by contraries : and foul Acts keep Vertue from the charms of Vice. An ancient Poet writ well to this purpose, thus :

-----*Insuevit Pater optimus hoc me,  
Vt fugerem exemplis vitiorum quaeq : notando.  
Quum me hortaretur parce, frugaliter atq,  
Viverem uti contentus ea, quod mi ipse parasset :  
Nonne vides Albi ut male vivat filius ? utq,  
Barrus inops ? Magnum documentum ne patriam  
Rem perdere quis velit. A turpi Meretricis amore  
Quum detereret, Sectani dissimilis sis.*

-----*Sic me*

*Formabat puerum dictis*-----

-----Thus my best father taught  
Me to flee Vice, by noting those were naught.  
When he would charge me, thrive, and sparing be  
Content with what he had prepar'd for me ;  
Seest not how ill young *Albus* lives ? how low  
Poor *Barrus* ? Sure a weighty *Item* how

One spent his means. And when he meant to strike  
A hate to Whores, To *Seetan* be not like.

-----Thus me a childe  
He with his precepts fashioned-----

There is no better way to correct faults in our  
selves, than by observing how uncomely they appear  
in others. After a fit of Drunkenness, my conscience  
would usually accuse me, & many times, after con-  
victment, would pass so severe a sentence of condem-  
nation on me, that mine own hands have oftentimes  
been like to prove my Executioners. Considering  
within my self what should be the cause of this trou-  
ble & self-loathing, I found it proceeded from no o-  
ther reason than the observation of others in the like  
beastly condition & how noisom it hath rendred  
them to all. The first thing that made me abhor a  
Cholerick passion, and a sawcy pride in my self (of  
which I was too guilty) was the seeing how ridicu-  
lous and contemptible they rendred those that are  
infested with them. Besides, those that are thorowly  
experient'd in navigatiton, do as well know the coasts  
as the Ocean, as well the sands, the shallows, and  
the rocks, as the secured depth in the most dangerless  
channel: so I think those that would arrive to as  
much perfection as they are capable of enjoying  
here, must as well know bad, that they may abtrude  
or shun it; as the Good, that they may embrace it.  
And this knowledge we can neither have so cheap  
nor so certain, as by seeing it in others: for under a  
Crown you may buy the whole experience of a mans  
Life (as of mine) which cost some thousands, though  
me no more hundreds than what I borrowed of the  
world, having of mine own nothing originally. If  
we could pass the world without meeting Vices, then  
the

the knowledge of Vertue onely were sufficient: but it is impossible to live, and not encounter her. Vice is as a God in this world: for as she ruleth almost uncontrollably, so she assumes to her self ubiquity: we cannot go any where, but that she presents her self to the eye &c. If any be unwittingly cast thereon let him observe for his own more safe direction. He is happy, that makes another mans vices steps for him to climb to his Eternal rest by. The wise Physicians make poyson medicinable: and even the Mud of the World by the industrious (yet ingratefull) *Hellander*, is turned to an useful fuel.

If (Reader) then thou lightest here on any thing that is bad, by considering the sorded stains, either correct those faults thou hast, or shun those thou mightest have. That Mariner which hath Sea-room, can make any wind almost serve to set him forwards in his wished Voyage: so may a wise man take any advantage to set himself forward to the haven of Vertue. Man, as soon as created, had two great suiters for his life and soul; the one Vertue, and the other Vice: Vertue came in this manner, and thus attended, Truth ran before her naked, yet couragious, after her followed Labour, Cold, Hunger, Thirst, Care and vigilance: these poorly arrayed, as looking upon it unseemly to go finer than their Mistress who was plainly and meanly clad, yet clearly, and her countenance shew'd such a self-perfection, that she might very well Emblem whatsoever Omnipotency could make most rare. Modest she was, and lovely, that whosoever lookt on her stedfastly, could not but insole himself in her. After her followed Content, enricht with Jewels, and overspread with Perfumes, carrying with her all the Treasure and gassie riches of the world. Then came Joy, with a  
essentia

essential Pleasures: Honour, with all the ancient Orders of Nobility, Scepters, Thrones and Crowns Imperial. Lastly, Glory, whose brightness was such, (which she shook from her Sunny tresses) that it dazled the eyes of her beholders, so that they could never truly describe her. In the rear came Eternity casting a ring about them, which like a strong Enchantment made them ever the same. Vice strove not to be behind-hand with Virtue; wherefore she set out too and in this form: Her precursor or fore-runner was Lying, a painted housewife, of a smooth, insinuating, and deluding tongue, gaudily clad all in changeable, but under her vestments she was full of scabs and loathsome ulcers. Her words seem'd exceeding pleasant, promising to all she met whatsoever could be wisht for, in the behalf of her Mistress Vice. On this hypocritical Quean Wit waited, next him a conceited fellow, and one that over-swayed the Fancy of man with his pretty tricks and gambals. Sloth and Luxury followed these so full, that they were even ready to be choaked with their own fat. After these followed some Impostors, to personate Content, Joy and Honour, in all their wealth and Royal dignities. Close after these, Vice came her self, sumptuously apparel'd, but yet a nasty surfeited slut; her breath being so infectious, that he which kiss'd her, was sure to perish. After her followed suddenly Guilt; Horror, Shame, Loss, Want, Sorrow, Torment; and these were charmed with Eternity's Ring, as the former. And thus they wooed fond Man, who taken with the subtle cozenages of Vice, yielded to lie with her; whereby he had his Nature so empoysoned, that his seed was all vitiated and con-

taminated, and his corruption even to this day is still convey'd to his undone posterity. It is mans folly, onely to look on the fore-runners of Vertue, which are very poor, as Cold, Hunger, Thirst, &c. but not to consider her glorious attendants that follow after, as Content, Joy, Honor, and Glory. We fancy Vice for her outside, not imagining what she is when stript of all her Gauderies.

If you then intend to enjoy for your portion a Kingdom hereafter, adhere not to the allurements of Vice; for she will soon perswade you to be an unthrif, to sell your inheritance whilest it is but in Reversion. But hearken to Vertue's counsel, she will teach you how to husband all things well, so as to become a purchaser of no less then Joys eternal.

*Fortunes favours oft do fade,  
To those that in her Arms do sleep :  
Shelters your selves in Vertue's shade ;  
She Crowneeth those that do her reap ;  
For though darkned, you may say,  
When Friends fail, and Fortunes frown,  
Though Virtue is the roughest way,  
Yet proves at Night a bed of Down.*

**T**HUS have I given you a Summary Accompt of the Life of our Witty Extravagant, from his Non-age to the Meridian of his days. I left him in the *East-Indies*, and shall e're long discover what further progress he made there in his Cheats, not omitting the description of those places, wherein he perpetrated his Rogueries. In his return to his  
own



own country, by foulness of weather, he landed in *Spain*, and finding the first place suitable to his designs, he over-ran that Countrey. From thence into *Italy*, acquainting himself with the most eminent Cities thereof; then into *France*, in which no place of note was unknown to him; which places we shall endeavour to give you an exact Chro-nography. We shall likewise inform you what company he kept; Rogues of all sorts and sizes, of divers Countreys, and how far he out-did them all.

Lastly, his arrivall at *Graves-end*, from whence he came to *London*, in the rise of the late dismal (and never to be forgotten) Contagion; acting in that time of horrid Mortality, what will scarcely be comprehended within future belief, or expressible by Pen. I shall also trace him to that great and dismal Conflagration, the burning of the City of *London*, in which by just Vengeance he lost what he had unlawfully gotten, with his most nefarious and wicked life.

---

*F I N I S.*